

Lib. THE *Abbot*
ca

LIFE

Edin- AND *Burgene*

ACTS

OF THE

Most famous and valiant
CHAMPION,

Sir William Wallace,

Knight of Ellerslie;

MAINTAINER OF THE LIBERTY
OF

SCOTLAND.

With a PREFACE containing a short
summe of the History of that time.

A.B.C. 39.

EDINBURGH,

Printed by ANDRO ANDERSON

Anno Dom. 1666.

Donatus fume Bibliothecae
Edinburgae
At Magistroy Candidatus
A. Dom
1659.



learn
sewa
ver fe
or the
collar
onsta
nich
nera
van
e on
llfare
Th
ugh
ons
Ye
pic
hou
of
liam
e h

THE
P R I N T E R
TO THE
R E A D E R.

His History of *Sir William Wallace*,
with the other of the vallant King
Robert Bruce, which followeth up-
on the end of it (the former writ-
ten in Latine by Master *John*
Blair, Chaplain to *Wallace*, and
turned into *Scots Meeter* by one
called *Blind Harry*, in the dayes
of King *James*, the fourth: the
other written by Master *John*
Barber Arch-dean of *Aberdene*,

learned man in the dayes of King *David Bruce*, and *Robert*
Stewart) contain the Relation of the most famous war that
ever fell out in the Isle of *Britain*, foughten most vallantly
for the space of fourty years, betwixt the two Realms of
Scotland and *England*, the one unjustly pursuing the other,
constantly defending the Liberties of this Countrey. During
which broils, there happened great alterations, both in the
general state of this Kingdom, and in the overthrow and
advancement of particular Families; the one for betraying,
the other for maintaining their Countries freedom and
welfare.

That the whole History may be the more clear, we have
ought good in a short Preface, to set down the causes, oc-
cassions, and the most memorable passages of this war. In
Year, 1285. *Alexander* the third, King of *Scotland*, be-
travellously taken away by a fall off his horse at *Kinghorn*,
without any issue of his body, and in him the whole posterity
of his father *Alexander* the second, and Grand-father
William the Lyon being extinct, the right of the Crown fell
to the heirs of *David Earl of Huntingtown and Garioch*, young-

The Printer to the Reader

descended of *Ada* youngest daughter to Prince *David* of *Huntingtown*.

Having thus prepared matters, he came to *Barwick*, and met with the States of *Scotland*, to whom he promised to decide the controversy according to equity; which that it might seem more likely, he had brought from *France* sundry of the most famous Lawyers of that age: he choosed also out of the States of *Scotland*, assembled twelve of the wisest and most honourable, to whom he joined the like number of *English*, as Assessors to him in this arbitrement. At this meeting, by the doubtfull answer of the Lawyers, and number of new pretendents, he made the matter more difficult, and appointed a new convention at *Norham* in the borders, the year following.

Difficulties thus increasing, and the Earl of *Holland* having on foot a great army to take the Crown of *Scotland* by force (which their own stories affirm to have landed in *Scotland*, and to have intercepted some strengths) At the meeting of *Norham*, King *Edward* dealt secretly, and by six Agents with the States of *Scotland*, for eschewing of imminent mischiefs, to become his subjects: he being descended of King *David*'s sister, and so but two degrees further from the Crown of *Scotland*, than *Bruce* and *Balliol* were. This being flatly by all, he betook himself to his other design. And first dealt secretly with *Robert Bruce*, promising to decern in his favour, if he would take the Crown of *Scotland* holden of him, and do him homage for it. But he stoutly refused to subject a free Nation to any over-Lord: whereupon King *Edward* called for *John Balliol*, who knowing that he was not so much favoured of the States of *Scotland*, easily condescended to King *Edward*'s desire: and being by him declared King of *Scotland*, the States desirous of peace, conveyed him to *Scotland*, where he was crowned, Anno 1291. and all, except *Bruce* swore to him obedience; shortly thereafter *Duncan Mackdougall* Earl of *Fife*, was killed by the Lord *Abernethy* (a man of great power in those times, allyed both with the *Cummings* and *Balliol*:) the Earls brother finding the King partial in administration of Justice, summoned him to compare before the King of *England* in Parliament: where he being present, and sitting beside King *Edward* (after he had done him

The Printer to the Reader.

him homage) when he was called upon, thought to answer by a Procurator: but he was forced to rise, and stand at the Bar. This Indignity grieving him greatly, he resolved to free himself of this bondage. At the same time war breaking out betwixt England and France, King Edward sent Ambassadors to the Parliament of Scotland, to send aide to him, as now being their over-Lord. There came also other Ambassadors from France desiring the ancient League to be renewed. The King and States of Scotland renewed the League with France which had remained inviolably kept for the space of five hundred years before. The King of Englands sute was rejected; because the pretended surrender and homage was made by John Balliol privarly, without consent of the Parliament. A marriage also was concluded betwixt Prince Edward Balliol, and a daughter of Charles Earl of Valois, brother to the French King Philip. Edward having fore-seen all these things, had drawn Robert Bruce Earl of Carrick, with his friends, enemies to Balliol, and diverse noble-men of Scotland, who held lands of him in England, to bring such forces as they could make, to assist him in the French war: but withall taking truce with the French for some monerhs, he suddenly turned his forces, destinate against France, toward Scotland. His Navy was vanquished at Barwick, and eighteen of his ships taken. Yet his land Host by the means of the Brucian faction, and the Englizd Scots Noblemen, took the town of Barwick with great slaughter, and shortly thereafter, Dumbar, Edinburgh, & Striviling. In and about these Castles, he had killed or taken captives the greatest part of the Scots Noble men: so that crossing Forth, the blow being so sudden, he found no preparation for resistance. Balliol rendred himself to King Edward at Montrose, and was sent by sea into England, where he remained captive, til such time as by Intercession of the Pope he was set at liberty, swearing and giving hostages never to return into Scotland. King Edward came to Scoon, and took upon him the Crown of Scotland, as forfeited by the rebellion of his homager Balliol. He sent for the Nobles of Scotland who remained, that they with such as were his captives, might swear homage to him, as their Lledge Lord and King. These who refused, were detained Prisoners.

King Edward thinking that now all was sure for him in

The Printer to the Reader

Scotland, lest *John Plansagenet* (some call him *Warren*) Earl of *Surrey*, and *Sir Hew Cressingham* *Treasurer*, and returned to prosecute the *French* war, taking such of the Nobility of Scotland as he feared, along with him, with their followers. The great men of Scotland being in this manner either imprisoned by King *Edward*, or sworn to his obedience, and ayed thereto by reason of their lands holden of the Crown of *England*, the rest either fled into the *Yles* and *Highlands*, or thought it sufficient to defend their own while better times.

But while men of power neglected the publick cause of the liberty of Scotland, *William Wallace* a youth of honourable birth, being son to *Malcome Wallace* of *Ellerslie*, but of mean power, having first in private killed many *Englishmen* of the garlsons as he could overtake them, by these exploits he became so encouraged, being a man of invincible hardiness, incredible strength of body, and withall very wise and circumspect, that he gathered his friends and neighbours, and by jeopardies and stratagems, diverse times cut off great numbers of the enemies. The report thereof drew to him such as affected the liberty and welfare of their Countrey, and had courage to hazard themselves for vindicating thereof. Amongst them the Earl *Malcome Lennox*, the Lord *William Douglas* (who had been taken captive at the winning of *Barwick*, whereof he was made Captain, and sent home upon assurance) *Sir John Graham*, *Sir Neil Campbel*, *Sir Christopher Setoun*, *Sir John Ramsay*, *Sir Fergus Barclay*, *Andrew Murray*, *William Oliphant*, *Hew Hay*, *Robert Boyd*, *John Johnstoun*, *Adam Gordon*, *Robert Keith*, *Reinald Crawfurd* younger, *Adam Wallace*, *Roger Kilpatrick*, *Simon and Alexander Fraser*, *James Crawfurd*, *Robert Lawder*, *Scrimgeour*, *Alexander Auchinleck*, *Ruthwen*, *Richard Luntie*, *William Crawfurd*, *Arthur Bisset*, *James and Robert Lindsay*, *John Cleland*, *William Ker*, *Edward Little*, *Robert Ruthersfurd*, *Thomas Haliday*, *John Tinto*, *Walter Newbigging*, *Jordan Barde*, *Guthrie*, *Adam Currie*, *Hew Dundas*, *John Scot*, *Steven Ireland*, *Master John Blair*, *Master Thomas Gray*, and other Gentlemen, with their friends and servants; who (after some vallant exploits happily atchieved and an army of ten thousand men led by *Thomas Earl of Lancaster*, to assist the Earl of *Warren*, defeat by *Wallace* or *Brigge*) holding an Assembly at the *Forest Kirk*, choosed *Wallace*

The Printer to the Reader.

to be Warden of Scotland, and Vice-Roy in *Bullio's* absence. In which Office he so valiantly behaved himself, that in a short space he recovered all the strengths on the borders, and brought the South parts of Scotland to great quiet.

The English fearing the loss of all, subtilly took truce with *Wallace* for one year, beginning in February. In June following they proclaimed a Justice-Air to be holden at *Glasgow* and *Aire* the eighteenth of that month: thinking to entrap *Wallace*, and all his friends, and under colour of law to cut them off the day appointed. All the landed men, according to the Custom assembling to this Court, the Englishmen condemned them of felony, and hanged them presently: among the rest *Sir Reynald Crawfurd* Sheriff of *Aire*, Uncle to *Wallace*, *Sir Brice Blair*, *Sir Neil Montgomery*, and many of the Barrons of *Kyle*, *Cunygham*, *Garrick*, and *Cliddisdaile*. These that escaped by flight advertised *Wallace*, who chanced to come latter then the rest. He assembling such of the Country, as detesting so horrible a fact, extremely hated the authors thereof, in the beginning of the night secretly entered into *Aire*, set fire in the place, where the Englishmen after that fact were securely sleeping, and suffered none to escape. The Garrison of the Castle rising forth to quench the fire, an ambush laid for the purpose, entered the house and made it sure. The next morning *Wallace* came to *Glasgow* where the Lord *Henry Perse* had retired from *Aire* the day before: whom he expelled thence with great slaughter. This victory he so hotly pursued, that immediately thereafter he took the Castle of *Siriviling*, recovered *Argyle* and *Lorn* with the town of *Saint Johnstoun*, and the Country about; thence he travelled through *Angus* and *Merns*, taking in all the strengths until he came to *Aberdeen*, which he found forsaken of the English, who had tied by sea, with the Lord *Henry Beaumont*, an English Lord, who had married one of the Hereditary Princesses of the Barldome of *Buchan*, named *Camine*. Thus all the North Country was reduced to the obedience of *Wallace* except the Castle of *Dundie*. While *Wallace* lay at the siege hereof, news came of the approach of the English army, led by *John Earl of Warren* and *Surry*, and *Sir Hugh Cressingham*, with a great number of Northumberland men, and such of the Scots as held with England.

The Printer to the Reader.

to the number of thirty thousand. *Wallace* (having with him ten thousand men hardned in arms) met them beside *Striveling* on the north side of *Forth*, which having no foords at that place, was passible only by a wooden bidge. This *Wallace* of purpose had caused to be weakned, so that the one half of the Host being past (led by *Cressingham*) the bridge broke with the great weight of their baggage. These who were come over, *Wallace* charged suddenly before they were put in order, and cut the most part of them in pieces with their Leader *Cressingham*: the rest seeking to escape, drowned in the water. The Earl of *Warren* with these who escaped, was assailed by Earle *Malcome Lennox* Captain of *Striveling* Castle, and being hotly persued by *Wallace*, hardly escaped himself, flying into *Dumbar*, a Castle then belonging to *Patrick* Earl of *March*. In this battel foughten the thirteenth of September, 1297. there perished no Scots men of remark, but *Andrew Murray* of *Bothwell*: The English Garlsons hearing of this discomfiture, fled from all places, so that before the last of September all the strengths of Scotland was recovered except *Berwick* and *Roxburgh*.

After these victories, *Wallace* held a Parliament in *Salme Johnston*, as Warden of Scotland, and sealed the whole Countrey, causing the Nobility to swear to be faithfull to the State, till such time as they might condescend who should be King: Earl *Patrick Dumbar* refusing to acknowledge the authority of this Parliament, was chased out of Scotland: and because the years by past the ground had not been manured, and great famine threatned the land, *Wallace* assembled a great Host and entred in *England*, where he remained all the Winter, and Spring following, living upon the enemies, and enriching his souldiers by their spoil: During which time the English durst never encounter him in open field: onely at his first entry, King *Edward* with a great army of raw souldiers came against him in the plain of *Stamwure*: but perceiving the discipline and hardy resolution of *Wallace* Host before they came nearer then half a myle, drew back his army, and retired: *Wallace* for fear of ambush kepted his souldiers in order, and persued them not. Thus King *Edward* left his Countrey to the mercy of a provoked enemy, & (notwithstanding that he promised battel, yet) kepted himself

The Printer to the Reader.

himself close, till a peace was concluded for five years, *B. r.*
pick and *Roxburgh* being rendred to the *Scots*.

Scotland thus enjoying perfite liberty, *Wallace* being earnestly requested by the *French King*, to the end that his special Captains might be kept in military exercise during the peace, sailed over into *France*, with fifty valiant men in his company. He was encountered on the way by *Thomas of Charlers* (commonly called *Thomas of Longovelle*) who with sixteen sail infested the seas: but boarding *Wallace* ship, he was taken by him, and thereafter fought most valiantly under him and King *Robert Bruce*, for the liberty of *Scotland*. *Wallace* after his landing in *France*, was employed in war against the *English*, who at that time possessed the Duchie of *Guyen* and *Bourdeaux*: then he defeat in sundry skirmishes. But in few dayes he was called home by his friends in *Scotland*: for King *Edward* understanding *Wallace* absence, and pretending that he had broken the Peace in *Guyen*, dealt with *Robert Bruce* Earl of *Carrick*, and his freinds, and with such Noble-men of *Scotland* as held lands in *England*, or enjoyed *Wallace* glory, showing that it was a shame for them to suffer *Wallace*, a mean Gentle-man to rule *Scotland*, while any of the blood Royal did remain; so promising his assistance to *Robert Bruce* he sent a great army into *Scotland* and by the help of the *Brucian* faction and *Englized* Noble-men easily obtained the greatest strengths of *Scotland*. *Wallace* returned the next Summer, secretly amassing a number of his special followers, who had lurked till his back coming, on sudden surprized *Saint Johnstoun* by a stratagem: and perching his victory hotly, chased the *English* out of *Fyfe*. Upon the report hereof, all the rest of his followers came from their lurking holes, by whose assistance he recovered diverse strengths. The Lord *William Douglas* took the Castle of *Angus* by a stratagem, and finding the *English* Captains the nearest garlsons to come to besiege him, he sent secretly to *Wallace*, who coming with his power, not only lifted the siege, but chased also the whole *English* Garrisons out of these quarters. From thence he came to the North parts, which he recovered with small difficulty, except the strong Castle of *Dundie*, to which he laid a siege.

The Printer to the Readers

The King of England grieved at this fortunate success of *Wallace*, and understanding that he was highly envied by the Barl of *March*, the *Cumines* (the greatest surname then in *Scotland*) and divers ancient Noblemen (to whose honour *Wallace* renown seemed to derogate) he stirred up *Robert Bruce* elder, and his faction, perswading them that *Wallace* was *Bruces* only Competitor for the Crown. Having so made a strong party for himself in *Scotland*, the next Spring he came with an army of fourty thousand men *Scots* and *English* to the *Faw Kirk*, six myles beneath *Striveling*. The *Scots* army was very great (being thirty thousand strong) if they had been all of one mind. For *John Cumine* Lord of *Cumbernald* (who had an eye to the Crown) had perswaded the Lord *John Stewart* of *Bute*, being tutor and grand-father by the Mother to the Children of the Lord *James Stewart* of *Ransrow* (lately deceased) to contend with *Wallace* for the leading of the vanguard, alleading the same belonged to the Lord *Stewarts* house by ancient privilege. *Wallace* refusing this, they parted one from another in a high chaff, there remaining with *Wallace* no more but ten thousand of his old souldiers. *Cumine* with ten thousand of his followers, after a smal show of resistance, fled treasonably, leaving the valiant *Stewarts* inclosed by two battels of the *English*, by whom (after he had foughten valiantly for long time) he was cut off with all his followers. *Wallace* with his battel defended themselves valiantly, untill they were safely retired beyond the river of *Carron*, losing (beside some others) the noble Sir *John Graham* the most valiant Worthy of *Scotland* next unto *Wallace*: *Bruce* (whom the King of England had brought with all his friends to the field, pretending to assist him for recovery of his right, from the usurper *Wallace*) perceiving *Wallace* on the other side of *Carron*, desired to speak with him, to whom he upbraided so foolish an usurpation of the Kingdom of *Scotland*, against so powerful a faction at home; assisted by so mighty King abroad. I (answered *Wallace*) intended never to reign in *Scotland*: But finding my native Countrey abandoned by you and *Balliol* who have the right to the Crown have let my self to defend my friends and neighbours from the unjust tyranny and usurpation of the King of England.

The Printer to the Reader.

who setteth you forth most unnaturally to tear the bowels
of your mother with your own hands. After diverse speeches
to this purpose, the Bruce perceiving the fraudfull and
tyrannous dealing of King Edward, returned to the Host.
The next morning Wallace understanding that the English
Army weakly entrenched, and in great security, amassing with
his own Army such as had escaped, set upon them in the
dawning before they could be arrayed, and killed many. So
that the English King returned at that time without any fur-
ther exploit. Bruce (remembering what he heard of Wal-
lace) desired King Edward according to his former promises
to put him in possession of so much of the Kingdom of Scot-
land as then was under his power, to whom he answered in
the French tongue, Have we no more ado, but conquer
Kingdoms for you? By this speech the Lord Bruce concei-
ved to great grief and anger, that within few dayes he depar-
ted this life without seeing his eldest son Robert Bruce (af-
terward King) being kept (for assurance of his fathers obe-
dience) in Calice Castle in France.

After this unhappy battel, Wallace striving to recover
such Castles and strengths, as King Edward had intercepted,
found such opposition and backwardnesse by his envious
emulators, that he returned to Saint Johnstoun, and in an
assembly of the States resigned his charge of Warden, and
with eighteen men passed again into France, according to a
promise at his last return therefrom: This fell out in the end
of the year, 1300. The opposite faction having gained their
desire, choosed John Cumine Governour: the rather because
King Edward had promised to assist him to the Crown of
Scotland. But he found him as great an enemy as he had
been to Wallace. For after seven moneths truce (obtained
by means of the French King) Edward sent sir Ralph Gon-
rald Ray with a great army to subdue the Scots, and to put an
end to the war: which they expected should be easie, Wal-
lace being now out of the way, John Cumine joyning with
the Lord Simon Fraser, making some eight or nine thousand
men, came to resist the English, who having wasted the
Country as far as Rossing, (about five miles from Edin-
burgh) expecting no resistance, divided themselves into three
battels, that they might spoil farther in the Country. The

Scots

The Printer to the Reader.

Scots embracing the occasion, set upon the first battell, and easily discomfite them: the second also (albeit stronger by the joining of these who had fled) was after a long conflict put to the rout. By this the third battell coming to the revenge, put the *Scots* to a great strait, as being sore wounded, wearied, and weakened in the two former battells, and having to withstand a fresh enemy of far greater number: hereupon they were forced to kill all the captives (lest they should assist the enemy) and with their weapons to arm their Baggage-men: and setting forward both with courage and necessity (seeing no escape) after a long and hard fight, they put their enemies to flight. This was the 24 of March 1302.

King Edward sore incensed by this evil successe, sent for Robert Bruce younger out of *Calice*: whom he perswaded, that he had for a long time against *Wallace* defended his fathers right to the Crown of *Scotland*, that having put *Wallace* out of the way, he found the *Cummings* as great enemies: notwithstanding he intended yet once more to put that enemy out of the way, and to settle him in his Kingdom. The young Prince believing him, caused all his friends and favourers of *Scotland* to join with him, and entering the borders, spoiled the Countrey, and took diverse Castles as far as *Dowglas*. Some report that the Lady *Dowglas* (named *Ferras* an *English* woman) betrayed that Castle to the Bruce, who took the Lord *William Dowglas* captive with all his children and goods. The Lord himself was kept prisoner in *Berwick* and thereafter in *York*, while he dyed. Mean time King Edward had prepared a mighty army both by land and sea: with which he entered *Scotland*, and subdued all before him, while he came to *Strivling*, kept then by sir *William Oliphant*: who after a long siege, knowing of no relief, yeelded the Castle upon condition, that himself and all that were with him should passe with their lives safe: notwithstanding King Edward kept still a'l the noble men, together with the Captain, sir *William Oliphant*: and such as would not swear homage to him (pretending to be protector of Robert Bruces right) he sent prisoners to *London*. Having in this Castle intercepted diverse of *John Cummings* friends, he procured them to draw him to a parly with him, in which he so blinded him with hopes of the King-

dom.

The Printer to the Reader.

om, and with fear of utter undoing, that he joined himself
nd his friends to the *English*, who by his accession easily
essed forward with the course of victory, as far as the out-
ost bounds of *Rosse*: And in his back coming carried
way with him into *England* all Books, Registers, Histories,
es, Laws, and Monuments of the Kingdom: and amongst
thers, the fatal Marble Chair, whereupon the former *Scots*
Kings used to be crowned at *Scooni*: on which was Ingraven
Prophecie, bearing, that, *Where ever this Chair should be*
transported, the Scots should command there. He carried al-
o with him all the learned men and professors of *Scotland*
among others the famous subtile Doctor *John Duns*, sur-
amed *Scotus*) thinking hereby so to discourage and effemi-
ate the minds of the *Scots*, that they should cast off all care
of recovering their liberty; the memory thereof being drow-
ed in oblivion. At his return into *England* he left his
Cousin *Sir Aymer de Valence*, Earl of *Pembroke* Viceroy,
aving fortified all Castles with strong Garisons.

The *Scots* who stood for the liberty of the Country, be-
ing forsaken by *John Cumming*, sent earnest letters to *France*
o move *Wallace* to return: He was then making war upon
he *English* in *Guyan*. But hearing the mischiefs of his
Country, obtained leave of the *French* King to return: and
ecretly amassing some of the remainder of his old friends,
covered divers Castles and Towns in the North, and ha-
ing greatly increased his Army besieged *Saint Johnstoun*,
ill it was rendered: But as he proceeded in the course of
his victories, he was betrayed by his familiar friend *Sir John*
Senteish, to the Lord *Aymer Valence*, who sent him into
England, where by King *Edwards* command he was put to
death, and his body quartered and sent into the principall
Castles of *Scotland*, to be set up for a terrour to others.

Notwithstanding this cruelty prevailed little for the as-
suring of King *Edwards* conquest. New enemies arising
hence he least expected: For as he returned from his last
ourney into *Scotland*, *John Cumming* and *Robert Bruce* meet-
ing together, after long conference of the state of their
Country, perceived that notwithstanding he had promised
each of them apart his help to obtain the Crown of *Scot-*
land, yet his Intention was only to use their assistance to
conquer

The Printer to the Reader.

Scots embracing the occasion, set upon the first battell, and easily discomfite them: the second also (albeit stronger by the joining of these who had fled) was after a long conflict put to the rout. By this the third battell coming to the revenge, put the Scots to a great strait, as being sore wounded, wearied, and weakned in the two former battells, and having to withstand a fresh enemy of far greater number: hereupon they were forced to kill all the captives (lest they should assist the enemy) and with their weapons to arm their Baggage-men: and seeing forward both with courage and necessity (seeing no escape) after a long and hard fight, they put their enemies to flight. This was the 24 of March 1302.

King Edward sore incensed by this evil successe, sent for Robert Bruce younger out of Calice: whom he perswaded, that he had for a long time against Wallace defended his fathers right to the Crown of Scotland, that having put Wallace out of the way, he found the Cummings as great enemies: notwithstanding he intended yet once more to put that enemy out of the way, and to settle him in his Kingdom. The young Prince believing him, caused all his friends and favourers of Scotland to join with him, and entering the borders, spoiled the Countrey, and took diverse Castles as far as Douglas. Some report that the Lady Douglas (named Ferras an English woman) betrayed that Castle to the Bruce, who took the Lord William Douglas captive with all his children and goods. The Lord himself was kept prisoner in Berwick and thereafter in York, while he dyed. Mean time King Edward had prepared a mighty army both by land and sea: with which he entered Scotland, and subdued all before him, while he came to Striviling, kept then by sir William Oliphant: who after a long Gedge, knowing of no relief, yeilded the Castle upon condition, that himself and all that were with him should passe with their lives safe: notwithstanding King Edward kept still all the noble men, together with the Captain, sir William Oliphant: and such as would not swear homage to him (pretending to be protector of Robert Bruces right) he sent prisoners to London. Having in this Castle intercepted diverse of John Cummings friends, he procured them to draw him to a party with him, in which he so blinded him with hopes of the King-

dom,

The Printer to the Reader.

om, and with fear of utter undoing, that he joined himself and his friends to the *English*, who by his accession easily passed forward with the course of victory, as far as the utmost bounds of *Rossie*: And in his back coming carried away with him into *England* all Books, Registers, Histories, Laws, and Monuments of the Kingdom: and amongst others, the fatal Marble Chair, whereupon the former *Scots* Kings used to be crowned at *Scooni* on which was ingraven Prophecie, bearing, that, *Where ever this Chair should be transported, the Scots should command there.* He carried also with him all the learned men and professors of *Scotland* (among others the famous subtile Doctor *John Duns*, surnamed *Scotus*) thinking hereby so to discourage and effeminate the minds of the *Scots*, that they should cast off all care of recovering their liberty; the memory thereof being drowned in oblivion. At his return into *England* he left his Cousin, *Sir Aymer de Valence*, Earl of *Pembroke* Viceroy, having fortified all Castles with strong Garisons.

The *Scots* who stood for the liberty of the Country, being forsaken by *John Cumming*, sent earnest letters to *France* to move *Wallace* to return: He was then making war upon the *English* in *Guyan*. But hearing the mischiefs of his Country, obtained leave of the *French* King to return: and secretly amassing some of the remainder of his old friends, recovered divers Castles and Towns in the North, and having greatly increased his Army besieged *Saint Johnstoun*, till it was rendered: But as he proceeded in the course of his victories, he was betrayed by his familiar friend *Sir John Menteith*, to the Lord *Aymer Valence*, who sent him into *England*, where by King *Edwards* command he was put to death, and his body quartered and sent into the principal Cities of *Scotland*, to be set up for a terrour to others.

Notwithstanding this cruelty prevailed little for the assisting of King *Edwards* conquest. New enemies arising whence he least expected: For as he returned from his last journey into *Scotland*, *John Cumming* and *Robert Bruce* meeting together, after long conference of the state of their Countrey, perceived that notwithstanding he had promised each of them apart his help to obtain the Crown of *Scotland*, yet his intention was only to use their assistance to conquer

The Printer to the Reader.

conquer and assure to himself: as he well declared by spoiling the Countre of all Monuments publick and private. Hereupon they agreed that *Cumming* should quite all his right to the Crown in favour of the *Bruce*, and that *Bruce* should give him all his lands for his assistance. This Contract written and sealed by both parties, *Bruce* returned into *England* with the Host, waiting for a fit time to escape from King *Edward*, in the mean time *Wallace* returning and recovered many places in *Scotland*, sent privily for *Bruce* to come home and take the Crown, and to his brother *Edward Bruce*, a most valiant youth, who coming out of *Ireland*, took sundry strengths in *Annandale* and *Galloway*. *Cumine* who had kept old enmity with *Wallace*, notwithstanding that *Bruce* by his means should come to the Crown, revealed the Contract betwixt him and *Bruce* to King *Edward*: who at first delayed to cut off *Robert Bruce* till such time as he might get the rest of his brethren in his hands. *Bruce* advertised of his danger by the *Earl of Gloucester* (some call him the *Earl of Montgomery*) his old friend who had sent him a pair of sharp spurs and some crownes of Gold, as if he had borrowed the same, guessing the meaning of this propine, caused by night shoe three horse back ward and posted away from the Court with two in his company and on the fifth day (the way being deep in winter) arrived at his own Castle of *Lochmabane*, where he found his brother *Edward* with *Robert Fleming*, *James Lyndesay*, *Rogier Kirkpatrick*, and *Thomas of Charterke*, who told him how *Wallace* was betrayed by *Sir John Menteith* and the *Cumine* faction a few dayes before. Immediately thereafter they intercepted a messenger with letters from *Cumine* to King *Edward*, desiring that *Bruce* should be dispatched in haste lest (being a noble man much favoured by the commons) he should raise greater furs. The treachery of *John Cumine* before only suspected, was hereby made manifest, which incensed the Lord *Bruce*, that ryding to *Dumfries*, and finding *Cumine* at the masse in the *Gray-friers*, after he had showne him his letters, in impatience he stabbed him with his Dagger: the other who were about him doing the like and not only dispatching him, but also his Cousin *Sir Edward Cumine* and others who assisted him. This slaughter

The Printer to the Reader.

spoke all out the ninth of February in the beginning of the year
ivate 1306. as we now account.

The Bruce thus rid of one enemy. found a great number
nould it were arising out of his ashes, even the whole possant
nteractiome of Cumine, with their allies, the Earl of March, the
In Lord of Lorn, the Lord Abernethy, the Lord of Brechin the
escap Lord Soules. The most part of the North, and the Galloway
ning followed the Cumines, the Lord of Lorn was of great
y for power in the Highlands : The Earl of March and Lord
other William soules commanded the Mers, with Barmick, and
at the Borders : All which they yielded to King Edward, and
Fallow maintained against Robert Bruce. At the same time his two
, no brethren Thomas and Alexander Bruce, with Reinald Craw.
o the younger, secretly landing in Galloway, were taken by
Bruce Duncan Mackdugall a great man in Galloway, and sent to
n his King Edward, who caused them all three to be hanged. On
the other side assembled to him (besides these above-named)
Glow the young Lord James Douglas (who hearing of his fathers
friend death had returned from France, where he was at Shooler,
nes and stayed a time with his kins-man William Lambert
aning Bishop of Saint Andrews) Earl Malcolme Lennox, Earl
ward John of Athole (although of the Cumines blood, yet,
pany being father in Law to Edward Bruce) Sir Neil Campbell,
river Gilbert Hay, Sir Christopher Seaton, Sir Thomas Randall,
brother Hugh Hay, John Somervale, David Barclay, Alexander
Rogers and Simon Fraser, Sir Robert Boyd, Sir William Haliburton,
house with sundry who had stood with Wallace before. With this
Cumine company he past to Scoon, and took upon him the Crown
ey in Scotland in April, 1306. After this he gathered an army,
King intending to besiege Saint Johnstoun : but finding his power
hast too weak he retired to Methuen, where he was unexpectedly
ons assaulted, and discomfited by Sir Aymer de Valence : but with
Cumine small losse of men, except some who were taken, as Randal,
which Barclay, Fraser, Inchmartine, Somervale, and Sir Hen
, and Hay who were constrained to swear homage to King Ed-
the had ward. The commons discouraged with this hard success,
n who fearing the English, forsook the new King, who had a few
like company of gentlemen about him : with whom he travel-
d towards Argyle, meaning to lurk for a time with his
gher brother in law Sir Neil Campbell. But he was encountered by
the

The Printer to the Readers

the way by *Iohn of Lorn* Cousin to *Iohn Cumming*, and constrained to flee, albeit with small daughter of his own folk. After this second discomfiture, he sent his Queen (being daughter to *Granney* Earl of *Mar*) with his brother, *Sir Ne Bruce*, and *Iohn* Earle of *Athole* to the Castle of *Kildrimmy* in *Mar*. The King of *England* sent his son Prince *Edward* with a mighty Host to besiege this Castle. The Queen hearing this, fled to the Girth of *Tane* in *Rosse*, but the Earl of *Rosse* took her and her daughter, and sent them captives into *England*. The Castle of *Kildrimmy* was traitorously burnt by one of the Garlison, all that were within taken and hanged at command of the *English* King.

King *Robert* feeling Winter approach, and finding no retreat in the main land, retired with his most entire friends to his old friend *Angus* Lord of the *Yles*, with whom he stayed a short time in *Kintyre*, and thereafter sailed over into the Yle of *Raughrine*, where he lurked all the winter every man esteeming him to be dead. The next spring he landed quietly in *Carrick*, and on a sudden intercepted his own Castle of *Turnberry*, the Lord *Persie* flying home out of it into his own Countrey, *Sir James Dowglas* departing thence secretly, came into *Dowglasdale*, and by means of *Thomas Dickson* an old servant of his Father, he recovered his own Castle of *Dowglas*, and cast it down, once and again. Therefore he returned to King *Robert* to *Cumnoke*, shewing him that *Aymer de Valence* and *Iohn of Lorn* with an army were coming against him. The King with five hundredth vallant men kept themselves in a strong place, waiting while *Sir Aymer* should invade: but took no heed to *Iohn of Lorn*, who fetching a compass set upon him back with eight hundredth Highland men: and had well nigh enclosed him about. The King perceiving the danger, divided his men in three, and appointing where they should meet at night, fled three sundry wayes. *Iohn of Lorn* having a slouth-bound pursued still after the King, who putting away all that were in his company, save one man, fled into the next wood, and with great difficulty escaped the Slouth-bound, *Sir Aymer* disappointed of this enterprize, shortly thereafter with fifteen hundredth chosen men, very nigh surprized the King in *Glentrole* wood, but the King with his

The Printer to the Reader.

men taking courage so resolutely, defended the place (being very strong) & killed diverse of the first who assaulted them, that the rest fled back : Thereafter with more courage he went in to the fields, and reduced Kile and Cunyghame to his obedience. Sir James Dowglas also with threescore men lying in an ambush at a strait place in Cunyghame called the Neithersoord, where sir Philip Moubary was passing with one thousand men against the King (being then in Kyle) killed many of them, and put the rest to flight. On the tenth of May following, sir Aymer with three thousand men came against the King, then lying at Gaston in Kyle. King Robert hearing of his coming (albeit he exceeded not six hundred men) came forth against him at a place under Lowdown hill: which he so fortified on either hand with dykes and fousies, that the enemies could not enclose him on the sides : and so by the stout and resolute valour of so few, sir Aymer was put to flight: which he took so sore to heart, that he retired into England, and gave over his office of Wardan or Viceroy, Iohn of Britain Earl of Richmond being sent into Scotland in his place.

King Robert after this past into the North, leaving sir James Dowglas on the borders : who taking his own Castle of Dowglas by a stratagem, razed it to the ground, and in few dayes chased all the English out of Dowglasdale, Atrick forrest, and Iedburgh forrest, and took sir Thomas Randall the Kings sisters son (who had followed the English ever since his captivity) and sir Alexander Stewart of Bonkle, sir Alexander and Simon Frasser meeting King Robert in the North, showed him how Iohn Cumine Earl of Buchan, David Lord Brechin, sir Iohn Moutray, and the rest of the Cumian faction, were gathering an army against him. Mean while by the assistance of his freinds in these quarters, on sudden he surprized the Castle of Innerness, the tame of which victory caused many other strengths to yeeld (all which he overthrew) and greatly increased the number of his friends. In his returning taking sicknesse at Innerury, auming set upon him : The King after his friends had for a time defended him, convalescing somewhat, went out to the field, and so hardly assaulted his enemy at old Meldrum, that (albeit their number was far greater) yet they took the

The Printer to the Reader.

the flight. With the like successe he set upon the King in *Glenesk* in *Angus*, where being shamefully put to flight, he fled into England with *Sir Iohn Moubray*, and dyed there shortly. Lord *David Brecchin* fortified his own Castle, but *David Earl of Athole* forced him to yeeld it and himself to the King. Mean time *Philip Fraser* took the Castle of *Forfars*; And the King persuing this victory, reduced all the North to his obedience: and joyning with Lord *James Dowglas*, returning from the South with his two captives, he took *Saint Iohnstoun* by surprisall: from thence he pass into *Lorn*, the Lord whereof had embushed two thousand men on the side of an steep hill, where the King behoved to enter thorow a narrow passage: But *Sir James Dowglas* with *Sir Alexander Fraser*, and *Sir Andrew Gray*, climbing the hill, came suddenly on their backs, and put them to flight. *Iohn of Lorn* fled into England by sea, his father Lord *Alexander Macdugall* yeelded himself, and the Castle of *Dunstaffage* to the King.

By this means all on the North side of Forth was reduced to obedience. *Sir Edward* his brother in the mean time with long and hard fighting had conquered *Galloway*: *James Dowglas* by a stratagem surpris'd the strong Castle of *Roxburgh* on the *Falkings-even*, while all the *Garlison* (after the custome of the time) were feasting and playing theryor. The report whereof so wheted the courage of the valiant *Thomas Randall* (newly restored to his Uncles favour, and made Earl of *Murray*) that having besiedged the Castle of *EDINBURGH* for some moneths, he set himself by all means to carry the same: which he obtained by a narrow passage up through the Rock discovered to him: by which he and sundry four gentlemen secretly passed up, & scaling the wall, after long and dangerous fighting, made themselves masters of the place. The *Garlison* of *Rugline*, *Lanerick*, *Dunfreis*, *Aire*, *Dundie* and *Bute*, hearing this, yeelded up these Castles, which were all razed. The *Yle of Man* also returned to the obedience of the Crown of Scotland. *Sir Edward Bruce* having besiedged *Striveling* Castle, three moneths agreed with the Captain *Sir Philip Moubray*, that if the King of England did not rescue him within twelve moneths thereafter, the Castle should be yeelded to King

Robert

The Printer to the Reader!

Robert? Albeit this seemed a rash provocation of so mighty
King **Edward** the second (who some seven years before
had succeeded his Father **Edward Longshanks**, but far dege-
nerat from his valour) having not only **England** and **Ire-**
land and many **Englized Scots**, with the **Duchie of Guyan**,
Bourdeaux, and other parts of **France** subject unto him,
also the **Low countreys** strictly confederat with him : Yet
King **Robert** prepared himself to encounter him in the fields
& gathered some five and thirty thousand men, few, but va-
liant. The King of **England** had above an hundred thousand
foot, and ten thousand horse : with which multitude inten-
ding to destroy the whole inhabitants of **Scotland**, & to divide
the land to his followers, he came to **Bannokburn** (some two
miles beneath **Striviling**) where on the twenty one of **June**,
1314. He was encountered by the **Scots**, and after long and
hard fighting his great army put to rout : himself with a small
company fleeing into **Dumbar**, was sent by the Earl into **Eng-**
land in a fisher boze, leaving two hundred Noble men and
gentle-men killed by the **Scots**, and as many taken : the num-
ber of the commons slain and taken, was incredible : of **Scots**
was slain two gentle-men of note **Sir William Wepont**, & **Sir**
Walter Rose, with four thousand common Souldiers. Af-
ter this victory, **Striviling** being yeilded, and **Dumbarton** got-
ten by composition, the Earl of **March**, the Lord **Soules**, and
Aberneby, and others of the **Cumines** allies, were reconciled to
the King : who past into the **Yles**, and brought them to obe-
dience, taking **Iohn of Lorn** captive, who died in prison in **Logh-**
leven. Thus **Scotland** was freed of the bondage of **England**, ex-
cept **Berwick**, which was recovered four years thereafter, **1318**.
and the **Scots** making diverse incursions into **England** under
the leading of Earl **Thomas Randall** and **James Lord Dowglas** &c
requited the harms received from them before, and enriched
themselves with spoil. As for the Authority of these two Hi-
stories, although they possibly erre in some circumstances of
time, place, & number, or names of men, yet generally they
write the truth of the story of these times both at greater
length, & upon more certain information, then these who have
written our **Chronicles**. So committing them to thy dis-
creet perusal (gentle and courteous Reader) I wish you
profit thereby, and all happinesse from **G O D** : Farewell.



A Table of the Contents of this B O O K.

T He Genealogie of Wallace.	Page
Barwick and Dumber taken.	
Balliol deposed.	
Wallace killeth Selbie.	
Wallace fisheth in Irwin.	1
Wallace slew the Churle in Airc.	1
Wallace slew Lord Perries steward.	18
Wallace imprisoned in Airc.	21
Battell of Lowdon-hill.	27
Wallace revengeth the slaughter of his father and brother on Lowdon-hill.	31
Englishmen took peace with Wallace.	38
Wallace slayeth the Buckler-player in Airc.	41
Wallace wan the Peet of Gargunnok.	44
Wallace passeth to Saint Johnstoun, and slew the Captain, and wan Kinclevin.	55
Wallace passeth to Short-wood-shawes.	61
Wallace sold to the Englishmen by his Lemman.	66
Wallace escaped at Elchock-park, and killeth Fawdon.	69
Wallace passeth to Lochmabane.	91
Wallace winneth the Castle of Crawford.	104
Wallace marrieth. Heselrig slew his wife in Lanerk. Wallace slew Heselrig for the same.	106
The Battell of Bigger.	117
Wallace burnt the barns of Airc, and slew Lord Persie.	126
Wallace slew Mackfadyean.	158
Wallace winneth Saint Johnstoun.	166
The battell at Strivilling bridge.	171
Wallace putteth Corsparrick out of Scotland.	178
Wallace gave Corsparrick, Bishop Belk, and Robert Bruce, battell.	184
Wallace abideth three quarters of a year in England, and cometh home without battell.	191

The TABLE

1	siege of York.	201
2	is taken with England.	215
3	allace passeth into France.	229
4	allace fought with the Red Reaver, and vanquish him.	233
5	allace passeth in Guyen.	246
6	allace wan Saint Johnstoun,	255
7	Black-Iron-side Forest.	258
8	allace winneth Lochlevin.	270
9	winning of Alrich.	273
10	allace burne the Englishmen in Dumbartoun.	276
11	allace rescueth sir William Dowglas in Sanquhair.	282
12	battel of Faw Kirk.	295
13	allace killeth John of Lyn upon the sea.	311
14	King Edward subdueth Scotland.	316
15	allace conquereth Guyen.	333
16	allace slayeth two Champions.	337
17	allace killeth a Lyon in the Barrace.	339
18	allace returneth from France, is at the battel of El-	
19	chock-Park.	343
20	allace besidgeth Saint Johnstoun.	357
21	allace is betrayed by Sir John Menteith, and martyred	
22	in England.	363

The end of the TABLE

106
117
126
138
166
171
178
184
191
The



of the most Famous and Valiant Champion,

Sir *William Wallace,*

Knight of *Ellerslie*.

THE FIRST BOOK.

С Н А Р. I.

Edinburgh

Ur Antecessours, of whom we should
oft read.

And hold in mind their fame and
worthy deed;

We let over-side, through very
lothfulnesse,

and cast us ever to other businesse.

vain gaming is set our whole intent,

which hath been seen into these times by-went:

the next neighbours that came of *Britus* blood,

ay often times to *Scots* wish little good :

ough now of late God turn'd their mind & wil,

at great kindness they have shown us untill.

the hearts of people the LORD hath in his hand.

may them rule, and guide at his command :

And though all leids would have this land in thrall,

upon his power GOD can against them all:

We have seen in our Forebears before;

of these parables, as now, I speak no more.

B

We

We read of one right famous in renown,
 Of worthy blood, that reigned in this Region :
 And henceforth now, I will my purpose hold,
 Of *William Wallace*, as ye have heard it told.
 His fore-fathers who like to understand,
 Of old linage, and true blood of *Scotland* :
 Sir *Rannald Crawford*, right Sheriff of *Aire*,
 So in his time he had a daughter fair,
 To young Sir *Rannald*, Sheriff of that Town,
 Was sister fair, of good fame and renown :
Malcome Wallace her got in marriage,
 That *Ellerslie* then had in heritage.
Auchenborhie, and many other place,
 The second Oye he was to good *Wallace* :
 The which *Wallace* full hardily had wrought,
 When *Walter*, heir of *Wallace* to him sought.
 Who likes to hear more knowledge in that part
 Co read the line of the first *Stewart*.

Now *Malcom Wallace* got with his lady bright
Malcome Wallace, a good and gentle Knight,
 And *William* too, as *Chronicles* bears on hand,
 Who after was rescuer of *Scotland*.
 When it was lost with treason and falsenesse,
 Over-set with foes, it fred through Gods grace
Alexander our worthy King forlorn,
 By eventure his life lost at *Kinghorn*.
 Three years still the Realm stood desolate,
 Where-through there rose a full grievous debate
 Our Prince *David*, Earle of *Huntingtown*,
 Three daughters had of great fame and renown
 Of the which three came *Bruce*, *Baliol* & *Haistie*
 Two of these three desired to be King :

The *Baliol* claimed of the first gree lineally,
And *Bruce* the first male of the gree by gree.
To *Edward* soon into *England* they send,
Of this great strife, they thought he should make
Folly it was (indeed it happened so) (end.

Succour to seek of their old mortall foe.

Edward Ling-shanks had now begun his war
Upon *Gascoign*, into an awfull fear :

The lands which he claimed stood in such case,
He thought full soon to make a whole conquesse.

To *Norham* Kirk he came withoutten maire,

The Councel then of *Scotland* met him there :

Full subtilly he charged them in bandown,

As their over-Lord, to hold of him the Crown.

Bishop *Robert*, in his time right worthy,

Of *Glasgow* Lord; said, That we do deny,

Any over-Lord, but the great GOD above.

The King was wroth, and home he did remove.

Yet *John Balliol* followed on him so fast,

To hold of him he granted at the last :

And contrare right, a King he made him there,

Where-through *Scotland* repented it full saire.

To the *Balliol* our Lords would not consent,

Edward forth-with set down a Parliament;

He called *Balliol* to answer for *Scotland* :

He wise Lords soon caused him break that band :

An Abbot past, and give over his alledgeance,

King *Edward* then took it in great grievance.

His Host he rais'd, and came to wark on *Tweed*;

Out for to fight, as then he had great dread.

To *Corspatrick* of *Dumbar* soon he send,

His counsell askt, for he the Countrey kend :

Where he was brought in presence of the King,
By subtil band they pocked up this thing.

CHAP. II. *The battel of Barwick.*

Earl Patrick then to Barwick can pursue,
Received he was, and trusted very true:
The King followed with his men of renown,
After mid-night at rest was all the Town,
Corspatrick rose, the keyes well he knew,
Let bridges down, and portculizies they drew:
Edward entred, and caus'd slay hastily,
Of men and women, eight thousand and fifty,
And children too, by this false eventure,
Of true Scots escaped no creature.

A Captain there this false King hath made,
Toward Dumbar, without resting they rade.

CHAP. III. *The battel of Dumbar.*

VHere gathred was great power of Scotland
Against Edward, in battel for to stand:
The three Earls was entred in that place,
Of Mar, Menteith, and Athol upon case.
In the Castle the Earle gart hold them in,
That to their men without they could not win;
Nor yet to them supplying for no mo;
The battels then together fast they go,
And many slain there was, without mercy;
Of true Scots over-set with subtilty.

Farle Patrick then, when the fighting was fellest,
To our foe turn'd, and harming did us maist.
Is none in the world that skaiths may do maire,
Then well trusted in-born familiare.

Our men are slain without redemption,
Through these deeds whole, tint was this Region.

Chap. 4. of Sir William Wallace 5

CHAP. IV. How King Edward and Corspatrick came to Scoon, and disposed John Ballioll, and had with them the Heirs of Scotland.

King Edward past, and Corspatrick to Scoon,
And there he got the homage of Scotland soon
For none was left the Realm for to defend;
For John Balliol then to Montrose they send,
And him deprived for ay of his Kingrike:
Then Edward himself was called a Royal Rike.
The Crown he took upon the self-same stane,
That Gathelus sent with his son from Spain,
When Iber Scot first into Scotland came:
That Kenneth King, the second of that name,
Broughe it to Scoon. and gart it stable thair,
Where Kings were crown'd eight hunder years &
Before the time that King Edward it fand. (mair,
These jewels he gart tursle into England:
In London set in witnesse of that thing,
By conquest then of Scotland made him King.
where that stone stands, Scotland should master be.
God choose the time, for Margarets heirs to see,
Eight score they led of greatest that they fand.
All heirs with them, and Bruce out of Scotland,
That office then he kept but short time.
I may not now put all the deeds in Ryme;
On Chronicles why should I tarry lang?
To Wallace again now briefly will I gang.
Scotland was lost when he was but a Childe,
All over-set with our enemies wilde:
His father Malcom in the Lennox fled,
His eldest son thither with him he led.
His mother fled with him from Ellerlie,

A Table of the Contents of this B O O K.

	Page
T He Genealogie of Wallace.	
Barwick ana Dumbar taken.	
Balliol deposed.	
Wallace killeth Selble.	
Wallace fisheth in Irwin.	
Wallace slew the Churle in Aire.	
Wallace slew Lord Perries steward.	
Wallace imprisoned in Aire.	
Battel of Lowdon-hill.	
Wallace revengeth the slaughter of his father and brother on Lowdon-hill.	
Englishmen took peace with Wallace.	
Wallace slayeth the Buckler-player in Aire.	
Wallace wan the Peel of Gargunnok.	
Wallace passeth to Saint Johnstoun, and slew the Captain, and wan Kinclevin.	
Wallace passeth to Short-wood-shawes.	
Wallace sold to the Englishmen by his Lemman.	
Wallace escaped at Elchok-park, and killeth Fawdon.	
Wallace passeth to Lochmabane.	
Wallace winneth the Castle of Crawfurd.	
Wallace marrieth. Heselrig slew his wife in Lanerk.	
Wallace slew Heselrig for the same.	
The Battell of Bigger.	
Wallace burnt the barns of Aire, and slew Lord Perrie.	
Wallace slew Mackfadyean.	
Wallace winneth Saint Johnstoun.	
The battell at Scrivilling bridge.	
Wallace putteth Corsparrick out of Scotland.	
Wallace gave Corsparrick, Bishop Beik, and Robert Bruce, battell.	
Wallace abideth three quarters of a year in England, and cometh home without battel.	

The TABLE;

1	Walter of York.	201
2	Walter taken with England.	215
3	Walter passeth into France.	229
4	Walter fought with the Red Reaver, and vanquisheth him.	233
5	Walter passeth in Guyen.	246
6	Walter wan Saint Johnstoun.	255
7	Walter Iron-side Forest.	258
8	Walter winneth Lochlevin.	270
9	Walter winning of Airch.	273
10	Walter burneth the Englishmen in Dumbartan.	276
11	Walter rescueth sir William Dowglas in Sanquhair.	282
12	Walter battel of Fawkeirk.	295
13	Walter killeth John of Lyn upon the sea.	311
14	Walter Edward subdueth Scotland.	316
15	Walter conquereth Guyen.	333
16	Walter slayeth two Champions.	337
17	Walter killeth a Lyon in the Barre.	339
18	Walter returneth from France, is at the battel of El-	
19	chock-Park.	343
20	Walter besidgeth Saint Johnstoun.	357
21	Walter is betrayed by Sir John Menteith, and martyred	
22	in England.	363

The end of the TABLE





THE LIFE AND ACTS

of the most Famous and Valiant Champien,

Sir William Wallace,

Knight of Ellerslie.

By Robert Blair

THE FIRST BOOK.

CHAP. I. *Edinburgh*



Our Antecessours, of whom we should
oft read,

And hold in mind their fame and
worthy deed;

We let over-slide, through very
slothfulnesse,

And cast us ever to other businesse.

For vain gaming is set our whole intent,

Which hath been seen into these times by-went:

Our next neighbours that came of *Brutus* blood,

They often times to *Scots* wish'd little good:

Though now of late God turn'd their mind & will,

At great kindness they have shown us untill.

The hearts of people the LORD hath in his hand,

May them rule, and guide at his command:

Though all leids would have this land in thrall,

None his power GOD can against them all:

We have seen in our Forebears before;

Of these parables, as now, I speak no more.

B

We

We read of one right famous in renown,
Of worthy blood, that reigned in this Region :
And henceforth now, I will my purpose hold,
Of *William Wallace*, as ye have heard it told.
His fore-fathers who like to understand,
Of old lineage, and true blood of *Scotland* :
Sir Rannald Crawford, right Sheriff of *Aire*,
So in his time he had a daughter fair,
To young *Sir Rannald*, Sheriff of that Town,
Was sister fair, of good fame and renown :
Malcome Wallace her got in marriage,
That *Elterstie* then had in heritage.
Auchenborhie, and many other place,
The second Oye he was to good *Wallace* :
The which *Wallace* full hardily had wrought,
When *Walter*, heir of *Wallace* to him sought.
Who likes to hear more knowledge in that part
Go read the line of the first *Stewart*.

Now *Malcom Wallace* got with his lady bright
Malcome Wallace, a good and gentle Knight,
And *William* too, as *Chronicles* bears on hand,
Who after was rescuer of *Scotland*.
When it was lost with treason and falsenesse,
Over-set with foes, it fred through Gods grace
Alexander our worthy King forlorn,
By eventure his life lost at *Kinghorn*.
Three years still the Realm stood desolate,
Where-through there rose a full grievous debate
Our Prince *David*, Earle of *Huntingtown*,
Three daughters had of great fame and renown
Of the which three came *Bruce*, *Baliol* & *Haistie*
Two of these three desired to be King :

The *Baliol* claimed of the first gree lineally,
And *Bruce* the first male of the gree by gree.
To *Edward* soon into *England* they send,
Of this great strife, they thought he should make
Folly it was (indeed it happened so) (end.
Succour to seek of their old mortall foe.
Edward Lang-thanks had now begun his war
Upon *Gascoign*, into an awfull fear :
The lands which he claimed stood in such case,
He thought full soon to make a whole conquesse-
To *Norham* Kirk he came withoutten maire,
The Councel then of *Scotland* met him there :
Full subtilly he charged them in bandown,
As their over-Lord, to hold of him the Crown.
Bishop *Robert*, in his time right worthy,
Of *Glasgow* Lord; said, That we do deny,
Any over-Lord, but the great GOD above.
The King was wroth, and home he did remove.
Yet *John Balliol* followed on him so fast,
To hold of him he granted at the last :
And contrare right, a King he made him there,
Where-through *Scotland* repented it full saire.
To the *Balliol* our Lords would not consent,
Edward forth-with set down a Parliament;
He called *Balliol* to answer for *Scotland* :
The wise Lords soon caused him break that band :
An Abbot past, and gave over his alledgeance,
King *Edward* then took it in great grievance.
His Host he rais'd, and came to wark on *Tweed*;
But for to fight, as then he had great dread.
To *Corſpatrick* of *Dumbar* soon he send,
His counsell askt, for he the Countrey kend :

Where he was brought in presence of the King,
By subtil band they pocked up this thing.

CHAP. II. *The battel of Barwick.*

Earl Patrick then to *Barwick* can pursue,
Received he was, and trusted very true:
The King followed with his men of renown,
After mid-night at rest was all the Town.
Corspatrick rose, the keyes well he knew,
Let bridges down, and portculizies they drew:
Edward entred, and caus'd slay hastily,
Of men and women, eight thousand and fifty,
And children too, by this false eventure,
Of true *Scots* escaped no creature.

A Captain there this false King hath made,
Toward *Dumbar*, without resting they rade.

CHAP. III. *The battel of Dumbar.*

VHere gathred was great power of *Scotland*
Against *Edward*, in battel for to stand:
The three Earls was entred in that place,
Of *Mar*, *Menteith*, and *Athol* upon case.
In the Castle the Earle gart hold them in,
That to their men without they could not win;
Nor yet to them supplying for no mo;
The battels then together fast they go,
And many slain there was, without mercy;
Of true *Scots* over-set with subtilty.

Earle Patrick then, when the fighting was fellest
To our foe turn'd, and harming did us maist.
Is none in the world that skaiths may do maire,
Then well trusted in-born familiare.

Our men are slain without redemption,
Through these deeds whole, tint was this Region

Chap. 4. of Sir William Wallace 5

CHAP. IV. How King Edward and Corspatrick came to Scoon, and disposed John Balioll, and had with them the Heirs of Scotland.

King Edward past, and Corspatrick to Scoon,
And there he got the homage of Scotland soon
For none was left the Realm for to defend;
For John Balliol then to Montrose they send,
And him deprived for ay of his Kingrike:
Then Edward himself was called a Royal Rike.
The Crown he took upon the self-same stane,
That Gathelus sent with his son from Spain,
When Iber Scot first into Scotland came:
That Kenneth King, the second of that name,
Broughe it to Scoon. and gart it stable thair,
Where Kings were crown'd eight hunder years &
Before the time that King Edward it fand. (mair,
These jewels he gart tursse into England:
In London set in witnesse of that thing,
By conquest then of Scotland made him King.
where that stone stands, Scotland should master be.
God choose the time, for Margarets heirs to see,
Eight score they led of greatest that they fand.
All heirs with them, and Bruce out of Scotland,
That office then he kepted but short time.
I may not now put all the deeds in Ryme;
On Chronicles why should I tarry lang?
To Wallace again now briefly will I gang.
Scotland was lost when he was but a Childe,
All over-set with our enemies wilde:
His father Malcom in the Lennox fled,
His eldest son thither with him he led.
His mother fled with him from Ellerlie,

To *Gowrie* past, and dwelt in *Kilspindie*.
The Knight his father thither had him sent,
Unto his Uncle with a great intent,
In *Gowrie* dwelt, and had their living there,
An aged man, which received them fair :
Then to *Dandie Wallace* to school they send,
While he of wit full worthily was kend :
Thus he continued in his tender age,
In arms then did many vassalage.
When *Saxon*-blood in this Region could reign,
Marking the will of that unrighteous King ;
Many great wrongs they wrought in this Region,
Destroy'd our Lords, & brake our buildings down.
Both wives & widows they took at their own will:
Nuns and maidens whom they liked to spill :
King *Herods* part they play'd here in *Scotland*,
Of young children that they before them fand.
The Bishopricks that was greatest of vail,
They took in hand of their Archbishops hail :
Not for the Pope, they would no Kirk forbear,
But gripped all through violence of wear.
Glasgow they gave, as at their vaile was kend,
To Diocie of *Durham* to a commend :
Smal benefices they would not pursue :
But for this thing full many other they flew.
Hanged Barons, and wrought full meikle care.
It was well known within the barns of *Aire* :
There eighteen score was put to felloe dead ;
But God above hath sent us some remead.
It is remembred farther in the tale,
I will follow upon my purpose haile.
William Wallace ere he was man of arms,

Great pity thought that *Scotland* took such harms:
 Meikle dolour it did him in his minde:
 For he was wise, right worthy, wight and kinde,
 In *Gowrie* dwelt still with this worthy man:
 As he increast, and with a bondan than,
 Into his heart he had full meikle care,
 He saw the *Sutheron* multiply mair and mair,
 And to himself oft would he make his moan,
 Of his good kin they had slain many one.
 Yet he was then seemly, strong, and bold,
 Ere he of age was seventeen winters old.
 Weapons he bare, either good sword, or knife;
 For he with them hapned full oft to strife.
 Where he found one out of anothers presence,
 After to *Scots* they did no more offence.
 To cut his throat, or stick him suddenly,
 He cared not, found he them anerly,
 Andry wanted, but none knew by what way,
 For as to him there could no man ought say:
 Little of speech, was courteous and benign,
 And of countenance he was both bold and ying.

CHAP. V. How Wallace slew young Selbie,
 the Constables Son of Dundie.

U Pon a day to *Dundie* he was send,
 Of cruelnesse full little he was kend:
 The Constable was a fellon man of wear,
 And unto *Scots* he did full meikle dear:
 Selbie he heght, dispiteous in outrage,
 For son he had near twenty years of age:
 Into the town he used every day,
 Three men or four thereto with him to play.
 An hiely shrew, wanton in his intent,

Wallace he saw, and toward him he went :
Seemly he was, right big, and well beseen,
Into a weed of goodly gaining green.
He called on him, and said, Thou *Scot*, abide,
What devil (said he) thee graithed in so good weed
An horse mantle it was thy kinde to wear,
A *Scots* whittle under thy belt to bear :
Rough rulzions upon thine harlots feet ;
Give me thy knife, what doth thy gear so meet ?
To him he went his knife to take him fra,
Fast by the collar *Wallace* can him ta :
Under his hand his knife he braided our,
For all his men that sembled him about :
But help himself he knew of no remead,
Without rescue he sticked him to dead.
The *Squyer* fell, of him there was no more,
His men followed on *Wallace* wonder sore.
The preass was thick, and cummered them full fast
Wallace was speedy, and greatly ala agast :
The bloody knife was drawn in his hand,
He spared none that he before him fand.
The house he knew his *Eme* had lodged in,
Thither he fled, farther he might not win.
The good-wife there within the close saw he,
And help he cryed, for him that died on tree :
The young Captain hath fallen with me at strife,
In at the doo'r he went with his goodwife.
A russet gown of her own she him gave,
Above his weed which covered all the lave.
A suddled couch over head and neck let fall,
A worn white hat she breased on withall,
For they should not long tarry at that Inne :

ave him a rock, and then sate down to spinne.
 he *Sutheron* sought where *Wallace* was but dread.
 hey knew not well at what gate he in yeed :
 at that same house they sought him busily,
 at he sate still and span right cunningly,
 of his time he had not learned lang.
 hey left him so, and forth their gates can gang,
 ith heavy chear, and sorrowfull in thought ;
 o wit of him as then get could they nought,
 he *Englisshmen* all then in barret bown,
 de fire all *Scots* that were within the town
 ec this good-wife held *Wallace* untill night,
 ade him good chear, and put him out of sight.
 ough a dark gate she guided him full fast,
 covert went, syn by the water past :
 urbure the gate, for watches that was there :
 is mother was into a great dispare :
 hen she him saw, she thanked heavens King,
 nd said, Dear son, so long where hast thou been ?
 e told his mother of that sudden case,
 hen weeped she, and said full oft alace :
 r that thou cease, thou wilt be slain withall.
 other, he said, God ruler is of all :
 nsufferable are the people of *England*,
 art of their yre me thinks we should gainstand.
 is Eme he knew that he the Squyer slew,
 or dread thereof in great langour he drew.
 his passed over, while divers dayes were gane,
 he good-man dread that *Wallace* should be cane.
 he *Sutheron* are full subtil every man,
 great ditty for *Scots* ordain'd they than,
 y the Law-days in *Dundie* set an Heir,

Then *Wallace* would no longer sojourn there.
His mother graithed her in a Pilgrims weed.
Himself disguised, syn gladly with her yeed.
A short sword under his weed bare he.
In all the land full many foes had he.
Both on their foot, with thē more took they night.
Who spierd, she said, To *S Margaret* they sought,
Who served her, full great friendship they fand,
With *Sutheron* folks, for she was of *England*.
Beside *Lundores* the Ferrie over they pait,
Then through the *Ochel* sped they wonder fast :
Into *Dumferling* they lodged all that night :
Upon the morn when that the day was light,
With gentle women hapned them to passe,
Of *England* born, in *Linlithgow* winning was :
The Captains wife in Pilgrimage had been :
When she them met, and had good *Wallace* seen,
Good chear they made for he was wonder fair,
Not large of tongue, well taught, and debonare.
Forth talking thus of matters that was wrought,
while south over *Forth* with her son she him broght
Into *Linlithgow* they would not tarry lang,
Their leave they took, to *Dunipace* they gang :
There dwelt his Eme, a man of great riches,
A mighty Parson, height to name *Wallace* :
Made them good chear, and was a full good-man
Welcommed them fair, and to them told he than
Did him to wit, the land was all in steir,
Treated them well, and said, My son so dear,
Thy mother & thou, right here with me shal bide
While better be thy chance, what may betide.
Wallace answered, *Westermore* we will.

Our kin is slain, and that me liketh ill,
 And other many worthy in that airt :
 Give I, will God, we shall us wreak on part.
 The Parson sighed, and said, My son so free,
 Cannot know how that redresse may be.
 What should I speake of frustrate at this tyde ?
 For gift of good he would not with him bide.
 His mother and he, to *Ellersly* they went,
 Upon the morn she for her brother sent :
 In *Corsbie* dwelt, and was Sheriff of *Aire*,
 His father was dead, that lived long time there.
 Her eldest son that meikle was of main,
 Her Husband als at *Lechmabane* was slain :
 Sir *Malcome Wallace* his name was but lies,
 His hoch sinews were cutted in that priefe :
 On knees he fought, feil *Englishmen* he slew,
 To him then fought mo fighters then anew :
 On either side with spears they bare him down.
 There sticked they that good Knight of renown.
 Unto my tale I left at *Ellerslie*,
 Sir *Rannald* came unto his sifter free :
 Welcommed them, and asked of their intent.
 He pray'd that he to Lord *Persie* would went,
 He irked of war, she would no farther flee,
 To purchase peace, in rest that she might be.
 Sir *Rannald* had the *Persie's* protection,
 As for all part to take remission :
 Then he caus'd wryte to his sifter that tyde,
 In that respite *Wallace* would not abyde.
 His mother he left, she weeped with heart full sair,
 His leave he took, then from his *Eme* can fare :
 Young he was, and to *Sutheron* right savage,

Great room they had, despite, and eke out-trage
 Sir Rannald durst not then hold *Wallace* there,
 For great perils he knew appearing were :
 For they had whole the strengths of this Land :
 What they would do, durst none against the stand
 Sheriff he was, and used them among,
 Ful sore he dread, that *Wallace* should take wron
 For he & they could never well accord,
 He got a blow, though he was lad or Lord,
 That proffered him any lightlinesse :
 But they repaired over meikle to that place.
 Als *English* Clerks in prophesie it fand,
 How one *Wallace* should put them from *Scotland*.
 Sir Rannald knew well a more quiet steed,
 Where *William* might be better from their feed
 With his Uncle *Wallace* of *Richartown*,
 Sir *Richart* heght that good Knight of renown.
 These lands whole then was his heritage,
 But blind he was, so happened through coura ge
 By *Englishmen* that did him meikle dear :
 In his rising, he worthy was in wear.
 Through hurt of veins, and minishing of blood,
 Yet he was wise and of his counsel good.
 In *Februaire* *Wallace* was to him send,
 Into *April* he bowned from him to wend.
 But good service he did him with pleasure,
 As in that space was worthy to advance.

CHAP. VI. How *Wallace* past to the water
 Irwin, to take fish.

SO on a time he desired to play,
 Inco *April* the three and twenty day :
 To *Irwin* water, fill to take he went,

Such

much fantasie fell into his intent :
 to lead his net, a childe with him there yeed,
 at he ere noon, was in a fellon dread :
 his sword he left, so did he never again,
 did him good, although he suffered pain.
 of that labour as then he was not flie,
 happy he was, took fish abundantly.
 re of the day ten hours could over-passe,
 iding there came near by where Wallace was,
 he Lord *Persie*, that was Captain of *Aire*,
 from him he turned, and could to *Glasgow* fare.
 art of the Court had Wallace labour seen,
 to him they rode five clad in garment green.
 int *Martins* fish, said, *Scot*, now we would have:
 Wallace again them meekly answer gave,
 were reason, me think, ye should have part,
 Faith should be dealt in all place with free heart:
 e bade his boy give them of his weathring.
 he *Sutherland* said, As now of thy dealing
 e will not take, thou wouldst give us over smal.
 e lighted down, and from his boy took all.
 Wallace said then, Gentle-men if that ye be,
 leave us some part, we pray, for charitie:
 n aged Knight serves our Lady this day:
 ood friend, leave part, and take not all away.
 hou shalt have leave to fish, and take thee mair,
 ll these surely shal in our sitting fare.
 e serve a Lord, these fish shal to him gang.
 Wallace answering, said, Thou art in the wrang.
 hom thoult thou, *Scot*? in faith thou serv'st a
 o him he ran, and out a sword can draw. (blaw.
 Wallace was wo, he had no weapon there,

But a pault-staff, which in his hand he bare :
Wallace with it fast on the cheek him took,
With so good will, while of his feet him shook.
The sword flew from him a foot broad in the land
Wallace was glad, and caught it soon in hand,
And with the sword an acward stroke him gave
Under the head, his craig in sunder drave.
By that the rest lighted about *Wallace*,
He had no help, but only on God's grace :
On either side full fast on him they dang :
Great peril was, if they had lasted lang,
Upon the head with great yre he strook one,
The shearing sword cut to the collar bone,
Another he hit on the arm hastily,
While hand and sword both on the land can ly.
The other two fled to their horse again,
He sticked him that last was on the plain.
Three flew he there, two fled with all their might
After their Lord, but he was out of sight.
Taking the Mure, ere he and they could twin :
To him they rode anone, ere they could blin,
And cry'd, Abide, your men are martyred down,
Right cruelly into this false Region :
Five of your men here at the water bade,
Fish you to bring, though it no profit made :
We are escaped, but in field slain are three.
The Lord asked, How many may there be ?
We saw but one that hath overcome us all.
Then leugh the Lord, and said, Shame on you fall.
Since one you all hath put to confusion ;
Who mones it most, the devil of hell him drown
This day for me, in faith, he's not be sought.

Whe

The Wallace thus the worthy work had wrought,
 their horse he took, and gear that was left there;
 gave over the craft, and went to fish no mare.
 Went to his Emme, and told him of the deed:
 And he for wo near swelt out of his weed,
 And said, Son, these tydings fits me sore,
 they be known, thou may gae skaith therefore.
 Uncle he said, no longer will I bide,
 these Sutherons horse let see if I can ride:
 when but a childe in service for to make,
 as Emes son with him he would not take.
 his good Knight said, dear Cousing, I pray thee,
 when thou wants good, come fetch enogh frō me:
 silver and gold he caus'd one to him give:
 Wallace then kneeled, and lowly took his leave.

The end of the first Book.



THE SECOND BOOK.

CHAP. I.

How Wallace slew the Churle with his own staff in Aire.

Young Wallace then fulfilled of hie courage,
 In prife of arms, desirous of vassalage.
 Thy vassalage may never be forlorn,
 thy deed is known, though all the world had
 for thy whole mind, labour, & business, (sworne
 was set in war, and very righteousness:
 and full great losse of thy dear worthy kin,
 he rancour more remains thy minde within.

It was his life, and most part of his food,
To see them shed the birning *Southeron* blood;
To *Ochterhouse* withoutten more he rode,
And but short time in peace there he abode.
There was one *Wallace* that welcommed him we
Though *Englishmen* thereof had little feel:
Both meat and drink at his will had he there,
In *Langlane* wood when that he made repair.
The gentleman full oft was his reset:
With stuff of house full oft he can him bet:
So he desir'd the town of *Aire* to see,
His childe with him, and then no more took he
Ay next the wood *Wallace* caus'd leave his horse
Then on his foot went to the market Crosse:
The *Perse* was in the Castle of *Aire*,
With *Englishmen* great number and repair,
And all the town ruling on their own wayes,
To many *Scots* they did ful great suppressse:
All but abasing *Wallace* among them yeed,
The rage of youth made him to have no dread.
A Churle they had that great burdens did bear,
Exceedingly he would lift mickle mair
Then any three that they among them fand,
And als by this one sport he took in hand,
He bare a sling into a busteous pole,
On his broad back, of any would it thole,
But for a goat, as fast as he might draw.
When *Wallace* heard speak of that merry saw,
Then he desired at that market to be:
For one stroak he bade him groats three.
The Churle granted, of that proffer was fain,
To pay that silver *Wallace* was full bane.

Wallace

Wallace that sting took up into his hand,
 All sturdily before him could he stand :
 Wallace with that upon the back him gave,
 While his rig-bone all into sunder drave.
 The Churle was dead, of him I speak no mair,
 The *Englishmen* assembled on *Wallace* there,
 All on the field of folks fighting fast :
 Unabased, and not greatly agast,
 Upon the head one with the sting hit he,
 While bone and brain he made in pieces flee.
 Another he stroak on the vainsnet of steel,
 The tree then rave, and frushed every deal.
 The tree was lost, the *Englishman* was dead,
 For his craig-bone was broken in that stead.
 He drew a sword that helped him in need,
 Throughout the thickest of the preasse he yeed,
 And at his horse full fain he would have been.
 Two griev'd him most, that cruel were and keen,
 Wallace returned as man of mickle main,
 And at one stroak the formost hath he slain :
 Full sore stroak the other got that tide,
 With his good sword, he made him there abide :
 At the corslet brimly he him bare,
 He grounden sword out through his body share,
 He slew he there, ere he past from the town,
 He got his horse, to *Langlane* made him bown :
 And keeped the child, and let him not abide.
 Escaped thus, he can to *Langlane* ride.
 Some followed him on horse, and some on foot,
 To take *Wallace*, as then it was no boot :
 The trees were thick that keeped him full well,
 But there to byde, he could never a deal.

It Good ordinance that effeired for his estate,

His custome was at all times air and late :

The Snyer *Wallace* in *Ochterbouse* that was,
Both bed and meat for him they made to passe!

As for the time that he remained there,
But sore he longed to see the town of *Aire*.

Thither he past upon a market day.

Would God as then that he had bidden away,

His Emes servant for to buy fish he sent.

Sir *Reynald Crawford* the Sheriff then was ker

CHAP. II. *How Wallace slew Lord Perfi*
Stewart, and was imprisoned in Aire.

W hen he had cane such good as he had bog
The *Perfies* Stewart right sadly to him sog

And said, Thou *Scot*, to whom buys thou this thing

To the Sheriff, he said, By heavens King.

My Lord shall have it, syn go fetch thee maire.

Wallace by chance, was near-by going there,

He went to him, and said, Friend, I pray thee,

The Sherriffs servant that thou would let him b

A lordly man the Stewart was of blood,

And thought *Wallace* him charged in terms rude

Go hence, thou *Scot*, the mickle devil thee spee

At thy Sheriffs use thou weens us for to lead.

An hunting staff into his hand he bare,

Therewith he smote on *William Wallace* there

But with his tree little sunzie he made,

Fast by the collar him caught withoutten bade,

A full great knife fast to his heart stroak he,

Then from him dead shot him right suddenly.

Cater sensyn I trow he was na maire.

The *Englishmen* assembled *Wallace* there.

core were set in armour birnest bown,
 market-day, for Scots to keep the town;
 Wallace boldly he drew a sword of war,
 the brime the formost couth he bear,
 through the body sticket him to the dead,
 sundry mo, ere he past from that stead.
 backward stroak another took he there
 on the knee, the bone in sunder share.
 third he stroak on a peasant of mailzie,
 craig in two no weeds might availie:
 Wallace fared as wood as a Lyon.
 Englishmen that were on bargane bown,
 kept the gate with spears rude and lang,
 dint of sword might no man to him gang.
 Wallace was harness on his body well,
 him they sought with sharp swords of steel,
 from his strength environed him about:
 through the prease on a side he brake out,
 to a wall that stood by the sea-side,
 well or wo there must he need abide,
 of their spears in pieces there he share,
 from the Castle other help came mair:
 over the dyke they glaid on every side,
 ke down the wall no succour was that tide:
 Wallace knew of no ween but to die:
 win his death amorigst them thus went he.
 her part in great ire hewing fast,
 birnest brand it bursted at the last,
 ke in the hilts, away the blade it flew,
 wist no ween, but forth his knife he drew:
 e first he flew which him in hand hath hint,
 d other two he sticket with his dint.

The remanent to him with spears have sought
Bare him to ground, no further might he now
The Lords bade, that they should not him flay
To pine him more they charged him to take
Into their Innes although that he had sworn,
Out of the gate by force they have him borne.
Thus good *Wallace* with *Englismen* was taken
In fault of help, for he was his alane.
He could not cease, his courage so him bare,
Favile fortune hath brought him in the snare
These false gods full of unrighteousnesse,
And false *Juno* full of deceitfulnesse.
These feigned gods, *Wallace* never yet knew,
Great righteousness him ay to mercy drew.
His Kin might not get him for no kind thing
Might they have payed the ransome of a King
The more they bade, the more it was in vain,
Of their best men that day seven hath they slain
They caus'd set him into a prison fell,
Of his torments great pittie was to tell.
Evil meat and drink they caus'd unto him give
Great marvel was if he might long there live.
And eke thereto he was in prison law.
While they thought time on him to hold the day
Leave I him thus into this painful stead,
While God above do send him some remead
The plain complaint, and piteous lamenting,
The wofull weeping that was for his taking,
The tormenting of every creature:
Alace! they said: How shal our life endure
The flower of youth into his tender age,
Fortune of arms hath left him in thirlage.

g this day a Chiftain have we none,
t take in hand, but young *Wallace* alone :
land is loft, he is caught in the snare,
A-per-se of *Scotland* is in great care.

H A P. III. *How Wallace was imprisoned
in Aire, and escaped.*

Arreld herring and water they him gave,
Where he was fet into that ugly cave:
food for him was feeble to commend,
n said he thus, Good GOD me now receive;
piteous sprit, and soul over all the lave :
careful life I may not now defend,
few *Sutheron* unto the death I drew,
that I rue indeed, and very true.
soon I will out of this world wend,
should now in prison make an end.
ternal GOD, why should I thus ways die;
e my belief all whole remains on thee ?
thine own hand full worthily hath wrought:
thou remead, no life they ordain me :
e only Saviour that died the ontree,
n hels prison, with thy blood hath me bought,
y wilt thou give thine handy-work for nought?
many other in great pain that I see,
of my life nothing else I rought.
O warried sword, of temper never true,
frushing blade in prison soon me threw.
Englishmen over little harms hath tane,
us they have undone mo than anew :
faithfull father despitefully they flew,
brother als, and good men many one,
is the date shall us overcome each one.

Of this Kingrick, dear God, when shalt thou
Since my power thus suddenly is gone.

All worthy *Scots*, Almighty God you lead
Since I no more in worship may you speed :
In prison here me worthes to mischieve :
Now silly *Scotland*, that of help hath great need
Thy Nation stands into a fellow dread.

Of worldlinesse right thus I take my leave.
Of other paines, God let you never preave
Though I for wo out of my wit should weave
None other gift I may now to you give.

Adieu *Wallace*, sometime was strong and free
Thou must of need in prison long endure,
Thy worthy Kin may not thee save for gold :
Ladies weep, that were baith mild and mure,
In furious pains, thy mother that thee bore :
For thou to her was dearer then the gold :
Her most desire was to thee under mould.
In worldlynnesse, why should any assure ?
For thou wert formed forcy on the fold,

Complain ye poor, thus as your schedul telle
Complain to Heaven with words that never fail
Complain your voice to the great God above
Complain for him that sits in sytfull Cells :
Complain his pain that thus in dolor dwells :
In langour lyes for losing of their love.
His furious pain was fellow for to prove.
Complain also ye birds, as blyth as bells,
Some happy chance may fall for your behove.

Complain ye Lords, complain ye Ladyes bright
Complain for him that worthy was and wight
Of *Saxons* sons that suffered mickle dear :

complain for him that is in prison dight,
 and for no cause, *Scotland*, but for thy right?
 complain also ye worthy men of wear :
 complain for him who was your asper spear.
Englishmen yet to the death he dight.
 complain for him your triumph had to bear.
Cellinus his master Jaylour was now :
Englishmen, alace ! why should we trow ?
 our worthy Kin are pyned on this wise :
 each rule but right, is little to allow.
 he thinks we should in barret make them bow
 our power, and so we do feill syse,
 from their danger, God make us for to rise!
 that well hath wrought before these times now,
 that they mark ay to wait us with suppressse.
 What would I more of *Wallace* torments tell,
 the flux he took into that prison fell :
 far to the death likely he was to draw ;
 they charged the Jailour there he should not dwell,
 that bring him forth soon out that ugly cell,
 judgement, where that he should thole the law,
 his man went down, and suddenly he saw,
 to his sight, Death had him snapped well snell.
 then said to him, He hath pay'd that he aw.
 When they presumed he should be very dead,
 they caus'd servants withoutten longer plead,
 with short advise unto the wall him bare,
 they cast him over out of that bailfull stead :
 of him they trowed there should be no remead.
 a draff-midding, where he remained there.
 his first Nurse of the new town of *Aire*,
 to him she came, which was full will of read,

And

And purchast leave, away with him to fare.

Into great ire they granted her to go.

She took him up without words mo,

And on a cart unseemly they him cast:

Out over the water they led him with great

To her own house withoutten any ho.

She warmed water, and als her servants fast,

His body washt, while filth off him was past.

His heart was wight, and flightered to and fro,

And his two eyes at last cast up also.

His Foster-mother him loved attour the law

Got milk to warm, his life if she might save.

With all her cure, great kindnesse could him ky

Her daughter had of twelve weeks a knave,

Her childs paps in *Wallace* mouth it gave:

The womans milk comforted him full swyth,

Then in a bed they brought him for to lyth.

And covertly they kept him in that cave,

Him for to save, how secretly they might.

In their chamber they kepted him that tide

She caus'd graith up a buird in the house side,

With tapestry cloaths honoured with great sight

And that the voice on every land should light,

That he were dead, throughout the Land so wide

In presence ay she weeped under sight;

But goodly meates she graithed either night:

And so befell into that self same tide,

While farther more that *Wallace* worthed wight

Thomas Rymer withoutten fail was than,

With the Minister, which was a worthy man;

He used oft to that religious place.

The people deemed of meikle wit he can;

and so he did, although they blesse or ban:
which happened sooth in many diverse place,
cannot say, by wrong or righteousnesse:
rule of war, whether he tint or wan,
may be deem'd by division of grace.

This man that day at the market had been,
Wallace knew this carefull case so keen.

His Master asked, what tidings that he saw?

His man answered, Of little heard, I mean.

The Minister said, That hath been seldome seen,

where Scots and English assembled on a row,

as never yet so far, as I could know,

neither a Scot would do a Sutherland teen,

he to him, as aventure might saw.

Wallace, ye know, was tane into that stead;

at over the wall I saw them cast him dead,

out of their prison, famisht for want of food.

The Minister said, with heart heavy as lead,

which deed to them, me think should foster feads;

he was wight, and come of gentle blood,

Thomas answered, These tydings are not good,

that be sooth, my self shall never eat bread;

all my wit, here shortly I conclude.

A woman then of the new town of Aire,

him she went when he was lying there,

on her knees right lowly them besought,

purchase leave, she might hence with him fare

rightlineffe they granted to her there,

over the water into her house him brought,

to buy him as goodly as she mought.

Thomas said, Yet shall I live no mair,

that be true, by God that all hath wrought.

The Minister heard what *Thomas* said in plain
He charged his man to speed him fast again,
To see the house, and warily to espy
What words he heard amongst them busily.
The man went out, at bidding was all bairn,
To the new town to passe, he did his pain,
To that ilk house, and went in suddenly:
About he blinked unto the boord him by.
The woman rose, in heart she was not fain:
Who lyes here? he did demand in plain.
Wallace, she said, full worthy that hath been.
Then weeped she, that pity was to seen
The man thereto great credence gave he nough
Toward the boord he bowned as he best thought
On knees she fell, and cryed, For *Jesus* sheen,
Let slander be, and from your thought it fleem
The man answered, By him that all hath wroug
I would his welfare, and cast into his thought,
Might I on life once see him with mine een.
He should be safe, though *England* would
She led him up to *Wallace* by the grees, (flee
He spake with him, then fast again can prease,
With glad bodward, their mirths to amend,
And came again, and told them whole to end.
He told to them, the first tydings was lies.
Then *Thomas* said, Forsooth ere he deceise,
Many thousand on field shal take an end,
From this Region he shal the *Sutheron* send,
And *Scotland* thrice he shall bring to a peace,
Into this Region great God shal send him gr
All worthy men that have good wit to wea
Beware that ye do not misdeem my tale.

merchance ye say, to *Bruce* was none such like,
 he was as good where deeds were to assaile,
 as of his hands, and bolder of Battel :
 but *Bruce* was known right heir of this Kingrick;
 for he had right, we call no man him like :
 but *Wallace* thrice this Kingrick conquest hail,
 in *England* far sought battel on that Rike.

CHAP. IV. *The battel of Lowdown-hill.*

Will return to my purpose again,
 When *Wallace* was relieved of his pain,
 the Country deem'd all whole that he was dead,
 his dearest Kin knew not of his remead :
 While whole he was, likely to go and ride,
 to that place he would no longer byde.
 his true keeper he sent to *Ellersly*,
 after him there he durst not let her be.
 her daughter als, her servants, and her childe,
 he made them passe unto his mother milde.
 when they were gone, no weapons there he saw
 to help him with, what eventure might faw :
 rusty sword in a nook he saw stand,
 withoutten belt, bose, buckler, or yet brand :
 long time before it had been in that stead,
 aged man it left, when he was dead :
 drew the blade, and found it would well byte,
 though it was foul, he took it with him tyte,
 to help his man, for thou shalt go with me,
 while better come, will *God* soon may that be.
 Sir *Rannald* as then he would not fare,
 to that passage, for *Sutheron* made reare,
Richardson full fain he would have been,
 get him horse, and part of armour sheen.

Then afterwards as he bowned to fare,
Three *Englishmen* he met ryding to *Aire*,
At their voyage in *Glasgow* forth had been :
One *Long-castle*, that cruel was and keen,
A bold Squyer, with him good yeomen two :
Wallace drew by, and would have let them go :
To him they ride, and said despitefully,
Thou *Scot*, abide, I trow thou be a spy,
Or else a thief, from presence would thee hide.
Then *Wallace* said, with sober words that tide :
Sir, I am sick, for Gods love let me go.
Long-castle said, Forsooth it bees not so :
A felloe sick thou seemest in thy fare :
While men thee know, thou shalt with me to *Aire*
Hint out his sword that was of noble hew,
Wallace with that at his lighting him threw,
Upon the-craig with his sword hath him tane,
Through braio and lyre, in sunder brake the ba
By he was fallen, the two were lighted down,
To venge his death, on *Wallace* made them bo
The one of them upon the head he gave,
The rousty blade unto the craig him clave :
The other fled, and durst no longer byde,
With a rude step, *Wallace* could after glyde,
Out through the ribs a sicker stroak gave he,
While liver and lungs men might at once see.
The horse he took, both weapons and armour
Then thanked God with glad heart in that ho
Silver they had, all with him hath he tane,
Him to support, for spending had he nane :
Into great haste he rode to *Richartown*,
A glad ssembly was at his lighting down,

When *Wallace* met with Sir *Richart* that Knight,
 For him had mourned, while feeble was his sight.
 His two sons of *Wallace* was full fain,
 They had him lost, yet God him saved again.
 As Eme Sir *Rannald* to *Richartown* came fast :
 The woman told by *Corfbie* as she past,
 How *Wallace* escaped, then on their way yeed :
 Sir *Rannald* yet was in a follen dread,
 While he him saw, in heart he thought full long;
 Then suddenly in arms he him throng :
 He might not speak but kissed him tenderly,
 His troubled Sp'rit was in an extasie :
 He glad tears brast from his eyes two,
 As he that he spake, a long time held him so :
 And at the last, right friendly then said he,
 Welcome, Nevoy, welcome, dear son, to me :
 Thanked be he that all the world hath wrought,
 That fairly thee out of prison hath brought.
 His mother came, and other friends anew,
 With full glad will to see these tydings true :
 Good *Robert Boyde*, that worthy was and wight,
 Would not them crow, while he him saw with sight.
 From sundry parts they came to *Richartown*,
 All worthy folks that were of great renown.
 Thus leave I them in mirth, gladness, & pleasance;
 Thanking great God of this so happy chance,

The end of the second Book.



THE THIRD BOOK.

CHAP. I.

How Wallace revenged the slaughter of his Father, and of his Brother, on Lowdown-hill.

IN joyous July, when the flowers are sweet
 Digestable, engendring with the heat,
 Both flower and fruit, bushes & boughs braid
 Abundantly in every flonk and flaid :
 All bestial their right course to endure,
 Well helped are by working of Nature.
 On foot ascending to the Heavens hight,
 Conserved well by the Maker of might.
 Fish in the flood resorteth really,
 To mans food, the world to occupy.
 But Scotland so was wasted many a day,
 Through war, such skaith, that labour was away.
 Vittail grew skant ere August could appear,
 Through all the Land the food happened ful dear
 But Englishmen that riches wanted nane,
 By carriage brought their vittail in good wane,
 Stuffed houses with wine and good vernage,
 Enjoy'd this Land as their own heritage :
 This Kingrick whole they ruled at their will,
 Messengers then such tydings told them till,
 And told the Persie that Wallace living was,
 And from their prison in Aire escaped hes :
 They trow'd it well, that Wallace past that stead,
 For Long-castle and his two men were dead.

The

they warried the chance that *Wallace* was so fast,
 every part they were full greatly agast,
 through prophesie that they had heard before.
Perse said, What need words more?
 if he be fast, he shal do great marvel:
 were the best for King *Edwards* avail,
 might he him get to be his stedfast man,
 for gold or land, his conquest might stand than.
 we think by force he may not gotten be:
 if men forsooth by his escape may see.
 thus deem they him in many diverse case.
 we leave them thus, and speak of good *Wallace*.
Richartown he would no longer bide,
 for friends counsel, or ought that might betide.
 and when they saw that it availed nought,
 his purpose was to venge him if he mought,
 in *Sutheron* blood, that had his elders slain;
 they let him work his own will into plain.
Richard had three sons, as I you told,
Adam, *Richard* and *Simon*, that were bold;
Adam eldest, was grown into courage,
 forward, right fair, and eighteen years of age:
 large of person, right hardy, wise and wight.
 good King *Robert* in his time made him Knight;
 long time after in *Bruces* wars abade,
 in *Englishmen* many good journey made.
 his good Squyer with *Wallace* bowned to ryde,
 and *Robert Boyde* which would no longer byde,
 under thirlage of sieges of *England*:
 to the false King he never had made band.
England was there, near consing to *Wallace*,
 then bode with him in many perilous place.

And *Edward Little* his sisters son so dear,
Full well graithed into their armour clear :
With their servants to *Richartown* they rode,
To *Machlin Mure*, and short time there abode
For friends them told was bunden in thirlage,
That *Fenwick* sent was for the carriage :
Within short time he will bring it to *Aire*,
Out of *Carleil* they had received it there.
That pleased *Wallace* in heart right greatumly,
Wit ye they were a goodly company,
Toward *Lowdown* they bowed them to ride,
And in a shaw a little there beside,
They lodged them, for it was near the night,
To watch the way as goodly as they might.
A good true *Scot* which Hostler-house held then
Under *Lowdown*, mine Author can declare,
He saw them come, he went to them on hy,
Both meat and drink he brought them privily,
And to them told the carriage men in plain,
Their fore-rider to *Aire* was post again:
Left them to come with power of great avail,
They crowed by then they were in *Annandail*.
Wallace then said, We will not sojourn here,
Nor change no weed, but our each days gear.
At *Corssintown* the way was spilt that ride,
For that same way behoved them to ride.
And from the time that he off prison fare,
Good summer weed dayly on him he bare
Good light harnesse from that time used he ever
For sudden strife from it he would not sever :
An habergion under his gown he bare,

good steel-cap in his bonnet but mair :
his gloves of plate, with cloath was covered well,
his doublet a closse collar of steel.
his face he kepted, for it was ever bare,
with his two hands, the which full worthy were,
to his weed, if he came in a thrang,
as no man then on foot might with him gang.
grown of strength, of power strong and sture,
his terrible dints were fearful to endure.
they trusted more of *Wallace* him alane,
than an hundreth of *England* might be tane.
these worthy *Scots* made there no carrying,
to *Lowdown-hill* past, in the day dawning,
revised the place, and put their horse away,
and thought to win, or never home to ga.
two scurriours sent to visit well the plain,
that they right soon returned in again:
so *Wallace* said, That they were coming fast :
then to the ground all kneeling at the last,
with humble hearts, praying with all their might,
to God above, to help them in their right :
they gaithed them in harnesse hastily,
there sonzied none good of that company :
then *Wallace* said, Here was my Father slain,
and my brother, which do me meikel pain,
so shall my self, or venged be but dread,
the traitor is here the causer of the deed :
then heght they all to bide with hearty will,
that the power was taking *Lowdown-hill*,
the Knight *Fenwick* convoyed the carriage,
as had on *Scots* made many shrewd voyage.

The Sun was risen, leiming over lands light,
The *Englishmen* saw that they came to the height
Near him they rode, and soon the *Scots* saw :
He told his men, and said to them on raw ,
Yonder is *Wallace* that escaped our prison,
He shal again be drawn through the town.
His head, I know, might better please the King,
Then gold, or land, or any earthly thing :
He made his servants bide with the carriage still,
Thought to demain the *Scots* at their own will.
Nine score he led in harnesse birnest bright,
And fifty were with *Wallace* in the right.
Unrebated the *Sutherland* were in wear.
And fast they came, full awful in effeir.
A manner of dyke of stones they had made,
Narrowed the dyke wherethrough the thickest rade
The *Scots* on foot took the gate them before,
The *Sutherland* saw their courage was the more :
In pridefull ire they thought over them to ride,
But otherwise it happened in that tide.
On either side, together fast they glade,
The *Scots* on foot, great room about them made
with prunzing spears, through plates of finest steel
The *Englishmen* that thought to venge them well
On harnest horse about them rudely rade,
That with unease upon their feet they bade.
Wallace the foremost in the birn he bare,
The grounden spear throughout his body share.
The shaft he shook it off the frushing tree,
Devoided it soon, since no better might be :
Drew swords then, both heavy, sharp and lang,
On either side full cruelly they dang.

Fightin

ghting at once into that fellon doubt,
 the *Englishmen* environed them about.
 through force they thocht out through them for to
 the *Scots* on foot that boldly could abide, (ride:
 with swords share through halse and habrick good,
 on the fields shot out the *Sutheren* blood.
 om horse and man, through harness birnest been,
 fore assailzie forsooth there might be seen :
 ey trusted no life, but to the latter end,
 so few folk, great noblenesse might be kend :
 ogether bade defending them so fast,
 arst none dissever, while that the preys be past.
 the *Englishmen* that were right wise in wear,
 force ordained in sunder them to bear.
 heir chief Captain, as fierce as any Bear,
 rough maltalent, and very proper care,
 n a great horse into his glistring gear,
 at over casts a fellon asper spear.
 he Knight *Fenwick* that cruel was and keen,
 f *Wallace* father he at the death had been,
 d of his brother that doughty was and dear.
 hen *Wallace* saw that false Knight was so near,
 s courage grew in ire as a Lyon,
 o him he ran, and frieks field bare down.
 he rode by, an acward stroak him ta,
 ch thigh and arson in sunder made he ga.
 om the courser he fell on the far side.
 ith a sharp sword he strake him in that tide :
 e he was dead, a great preasse came so fast,
 ver him to ground they bare *Boyd* at the last.
 allace was near, and turned in again,
 m to rescue, while he rose off the plain,

Wightly did him wear, while he a sword bath can
Throughout the stour these two in fear are gan
The remanent upon them followed fast,
In their passage feil *Sutherland* made agast:
Adam Wallace, the heir of *Richartown*,
Strake on *Bewmount*, a Squyer of renown,
On the pesant, with his sword birnisht bare;
The birnisht blade his halse in sunder share.
The *Englishmen* saw their Chiftain was slain,
Boldly abode, as men of meikle main.
Rich horse ramping rushed frieks under feet,
The *Scots* on foot made many lose the sweet.
Wight men lighted themselves for to defend,
Where *Wallace* came, their deed was little kend
The *Sutherland* part sore frushed was that tyde,
That in that stour they might no longer hyde.
Wallace indeed he wrought right worthily,
The Squyer *Boyd*, and all their Chevalry.
The *Englishmen* took plain part for to flee:
Little and Cleland made of their enemies die.
On horse some part to strengths can them bou
To succour them with many working wound.
An hundreth dead in field was leaved there,
And three yeomen of *Wallace* dead, but mair.
Two was of *Kyle*, and one of *Gunninghame*,
With *Robert Boyd* to *Wallace* came from hame
Fourscore escaped from field on *Sutherland* side,
The *Scots* in place that boldly could abide,
Spoiling the field of gold and other gear,
Harnesse and horte, which they needed in we
The *English* knaves they made the carriage le
To *Clyde* Forrest, while they were out of dread

and band them fast with widdies sad and fair,
 In bowing trees, then hanged they them there.
 He spared none that able was for wear,
 At women and Priests he made them ay forbear.
 When this was done, to dinner soon they went,
 Of stuff and wine, that God had to them sent,
 Ten score of horse they wan that carriage bare,
 With victual and wines as meikle as they might
 And other stuff, that they of *Carleil* led. (fare,
 The *Sutherland* part out of the field they fled,
 With sorrow sought to the Castle of *Aire*,
 Before the Lord, and told him of that care,
 What good they left, and who in field was slain,
 Through wight *Wallace* that was of meikle main;
 And how he made all his servants hang.
 The *Perfie* said, If that Squyer last lang,
 Out of this Land he shal exile us clean,
 No despightful in world was never seen.
 In our prison, here last when that he was,
 O'r slouthfully our Keeper let him passe.
 When this our hold I find well may not be:
 Wee must make bring our victual by the sea.
 But lose our men, it helpeth us right nought:
 Our Kin may ban that ever we hither sought.
 Leave I them now blaming their fory chance.
 And more to speak of *Scots-mens* governance,
 When *Wallace* had well vanquisht into plain
 That false tyrant that had his father slain,
 His brother als, which was a doughty Knight,
 Other good men before to death had dight:
 He caus'd provide, and parted their victual,
 With stuff and horse, that was of great avail.

To friends about right privily they send,
 The remanent fullgladly there they spend,
 In *Clyds* wood they sojourned there three days,
 No *Sutherland* was that durst persue those ways,
 But he tho'ed death that came in their danger :
 The word of *Wallace* walked far and near.

Wallace was known on life living again,
 Though *Englishmen* thereof had meikle pain,
 The Lord *Persie* to *Glasgow* could he fare,
 With wise Lords, and held a counsell there.
 When they were met, moe then ten thousand,
 No Chiftain was that time durst take in hand
 To lead a range, on *Wallace* to assail :
 Asked about, What was their best counsel ?
 Sir *Aimer Wallange*, that false traitor and strong,
 In *Bothwell* dwelt, and then was them among :
 He said, My Lords, my counsel will I give,
 But do ye not, from skaith ye may nor live :
 Ye must take peace withoutten carrying,
 As for a time, we must send to the King.
 The *Persie* said, Of our crews he will none,
 An awfull Chiftain cruelly he is one.
 He will do more in faith ere that he blin,
Sutherland to slay, he thinks it is no sin.
 Sir *Aimer* said, crews it behoves you take,
 While afterward for him provision make :
 I know he will do meikle for his Kin,
 Gentrice and truth ay rests him within.

CHAP. II. How the *Englishmen* took
 peace with *Wallace*.

His Uncle Sir *Rannald* may take the band,
 If he will not recognize all his land

to the time that he this work had wrought.

Rannald was soon to their counsel brought :

they charged him to make *Wallace* at peace,

he should passe to *London* ere he cease,

King *Edward*, and bide in his prison,

while they ask to have peace for his ransome.

Rannald said, Lords, ye know right well,

my counsel he will not do a deal :

worthy *King* despitefully ye slew,

prison then near to the death him drew :

is at large, and will not do for me,

ough ye therefore should now make me to die.

Aimer said, These Lords counsel to send

to the King, to make a final end

his conquest, forsooth he will it have,

Wallace nor thou may not this Countrey save :

ight *Edward* King get him for gold or land,

be his man, then might he keep *Scotland*.

the Lord bade cease, thou failest to that Knight,

more in truth then it is any right :

the wrong conquest our King desireth ay,

him and us, it shal be seen one day.

Wallace hath right, both force, and fair fortune,

heard how he escaped our prison.

us said the Lord, and prayed Sir *Rannald* fair,

make this peace, thou Sheriff art of *Aire*,

for a time we may advised be,

under my seal I shal be bound to thee :

the *Englishmen*, that they shal do him nought,

or to no *Scots*, but it be on them sought.

Rannald knew he might not them gain-stand,

Lord *Perfie* he had received that band :

Perfie

Persie was true, and ay of great avail,
Sober in peace, and cruel in battel,
Sir *Rannald* him bownd on the morn but bade
Wallace to seek in *Clyds* Forrest he rade:
So him he fand bowning to his dinner.

When they have seen this good Knight coming ne
Well he them knew, and told them what he w
Marvell he had what made him hither passe,
Made him good chear of meats good and fine,
King *Edward* himself could not get better wine
Then they had there, vernage and vennison,
Of bestial into great fusion.

Then after meat, he shewed them of this deed,
How he had been into so mickle dread:
Ne voy, he said; work part of my counsell,
Take peace a while, and for the more avail:
But thou do so, forsooth thou hast great sin,
For they are set to undo all thy Kin.

Then *Wallace* said to good men him about,
I will no peace for all this fellon doubtr,
But if it please better to you then me.

The Squyer *Bojde* him answered soberly;
I give my counsel, ere this good Knight be slain
Take peace a while, although it do us pain,
So said *Adam* the heir of *Richartown*,
And *Cleland* als to their opinion.

With their consent *Wallace* this peace hath tane
As his Eme wrought, while ten moneths were ga
Their leave they took with sad comfort in plain
I and God to brogh they should meet whole ag
Bojde and *Cleland* past to their places hame,
Adam Wallace, to *Richartown* by name,

With Sir Rannald can William Wallace ride
his household in *Corbie* for to bide.
his peace was cry'd in *August* moneth milde.
these gods of battel, furious and wilde,
Mars and *Juno* ever doth their businesse,
users of war, ay workers of wickednesse :
and *Venus* als, which Goddesse is of love :
and old *Saturn* his course for to approve.
these four shewes of diverse complexion,
tell, Debate, Envy, and Destruction:
cannot deem of their melancholy,
that Wallace could not well in *Corbie* ly.
him had rather in travel for to be,
right fore he longed the town of *Aire* to see.

CHAP. III. How Wallace slew the
Buckler-player in the town of *Aire*.

Ir Rannald past from home upon a day,
Fifteen he took, and to the town went they :
covered his face, that no man might him know,
nothing he cared how few enemies him saw.
sober weed, disguised well were they,
an *English-man* on the gate saw he play,
the Scrimmage, a Buckler on his hand :
Wallace near by in fellowship could stand :
rightly he said, *Scot*, darest thou not prieve ?
Wallace said, Yea, so thou dare give me lieve.
white on, he said, I defy thy Nation.
Wallace therewith hath tane him on the crown,
through buckler, brand, and through the harns also,
into the shoulder the sharp sword made he go.
rightly returned to his own men again,
the women cry'd, Our Buckler-player is slain.

The

The man is dead, what needs words mair?
Feil men of arms about him sembled there.
Eight score at once upon sixteen they set,
But *Wallace* soon with the foremost hath met,
With ire and will on the head hath him tane,
Through the bright helm in sunder burst the bane,
Another breathly on the breast him bare,
His birmisht blade throughout his body share.
Great room he made, his men were fighting fast,
And many a groom they made full sore agast:
For they were wight, and well used in wear,
Of *Englishmen* right boldly down they bear:
On their enemies great martyrdom they made,
Their hardy Chistain so well among them glade.
What *Englishmen* that bade into his gate,
Contrare to *Scotland*, made never more debate.
Feil frecks on fold were felled under feet,
Of *Sutherland* blood lay sticket on the street:
New power came from the Castle that tide,
Then *Wallace* fled, and drew toward a side.
With right good will he would eschew surprise,
For he in war was worthy, wight and wise.
Harns and heads in sunder hew'd he fast,
By force out through the thickest preasse he past.
Wallace returned behinde his men again,
At the rescue feil *Sutherland* hath he slain.
His men all then he out of peril brought
From their enemies, with al the power he mought
Unto their horse they went but more abode,
For danger then to *Langlane-wood* they rode:
Twenty and nine they left into that stead,
Of *Sutherland* men, that brittened were to dead.

remanent again turned that tide,
 in this wood they durst not him abide:
 ward the town they drew with all their main,
 sing the peace they took before in plain.
 Lord *Persie* in heart was greatly grieved,
 men suppressed again to him relieved,
 feil were dead into their armour clear,
 ee of his Kin that were to him full dear.
 en he heard tell of this their great grievance,
 r self was cause of this mischievous chance,
 urning he made, though few *Scots* it kend.
 Herald then to take *Sir Rannald* he send,
 to him told of their full sudden case,
 charged him to take soverance of *Wallace*:
 ould him hold from Market, Town and Faire
 ere he might best be out of their repair.
Sutherland knew that it was wight *Wallace*,
 t them overset into that sudden case:
 r trews for this they would not break a deal.
 en *Wallace* had this chance eschewed well,
 n a night from *Langlane* home he rede,
 chamber soon their residence they made:
 n the morn when that the day was light,
 n *Wallace* forth went *Sir Rannald* the Knight,
 w him the writ that Lord *Persie* had sent:
 son, he said, this is my whole intent,
 thou wold grant, while that this trews were
 kaith to do to any in *England* born. (worn,
 where I passe dayly thou bide with me.
Wallace answered, Good Sir, that may not be:
 t loath I were, dear Uncle, you to grieve:
 I do nought, while time I take my leave.

And

And warn you als, ere that I from you passe.
 His Emé and he on this accorded was.
Wallace with him made his continuance,
 Ilk wight was blyth for to do him pleasance.
 In *Cor/bie* thus he rested them among,
 There seventeen days, suppose he thought it lo
 Though they him pleas'd as a Primate or King,
 Into his minde remained another thing.
 He saw his enemies Masters in this Region,
 Might not him please, though he were King w
 Thus leave I him with his dear friends stil, (cro
 Of *Englishmen* now speak some part I will.

The end of the third Book.



THE FOURTH BOOK

CHAP. I.

How Wallace won the Peel of Gargunnoch.

IN *September* that humble moneth sweet,
 When by-past was of the Summer the heat
 Victail and fruit are ryped in abundance,
 As *GOD* ordained to mans sustenance:
Sagittarius with his asper bow,
 By each sign the verity to know,
 The changing course which makes great difference
 And leaves had lost their colour of pleasance:
 All worldly thing hath nought but a season,
 Both herb & fruit must from the hight come down
 In this ilk time a great counsell was set,
 In *Glasgow* town, where many masters met,

English Lords, to statute this Countre,
 and charged they all Sheriffs there to be.
 Rannald Crawford behoved that time be there
 for he through right was born Sheriff of Aire :
 as dear Nevyoy with him that time he took,
 William Wallace, as witnesse bears the book :
 for he no time should far be from his sight,
 he loved him with heart and all his might.
 they graithed them without longer abode,
 Wallace some part before the Court out rode,
 overtook the childe, Sir Rannalds sum should lead
 with him two men that worthy were indeed :
 softly they rode while they the court should know
 suddenly that time himself he saw.
 the Persies sum, in which great riches was :
 the horse was tyred, and might no further passe :
 five men were charged to keep it well that tide,
 two were on foot, and three on horse can ride,
 the Master-man at their servant can spear,
 who ow the sum ? the truth to me you lear.
 the man answered without ten words mair,
 my Lord, he said, it is the Sheriffs of Aire.
 since his it is, this horse shall with me gang,
 to serve our Lord, or else I think great wrang :
 though a subject indeed would passe his Lord,
 is not leisom by no righteous record.
 they cutted the brace, and let the harnesse faw :
 Wallace was near when he such robbery saw,
 he spake to them with manly countenance,
 in fair form, he said but variance :
 ye do us wrong, and it is time of peace,
 if such robbery it were good time to cease.

The *Sutherland* shrew in ire answer'd him to,
It shall be wrought as thou may'st see us do.
Thou gets no mends, what needs words main?
Sidly advised, *Wallace* remembered there
Of the promise he made his Eme before,
Reason him ruled, as then he did no more,
But past away to meet his Eme again,
Seeing this reaf was moved with great pain:
The horse yet took they, for aventure might fa
Bound on the sum, then forth the way can call,
Their tyred summer they left there on the pla
Wallace returned toward this Court again.
On the Mure side soon with his Eme he met,
And told how they the way had for him set:
And were not I was bound in my leadgeance,
We parted not thus for all the gold in *France*.
The horse they left which should your harnes
Sir Rannald said, That is but little dear: (b
We may get horse, and other things in plain,
If men be lost we get them never again.
Wallace then said as wisely, God me save,
Of this great misse amends shall I have:
And neither let for peace, nor yet pleasure,
With witnesse here, I give up my leadgeance,
For cowardly you are like to lose the right,
Soon after then your own death will be dight.
In wrath therewith suddenly from him he we
Sir Rannald was wise, and cast in his intent,
And said I will byde at the *Meirns* all night,
So *Englishmen* of us shall deem no unright:
If any be dead before us upon case,
Then we in law may bide the righteousness.

lodging took, at the *Meirns* still he bade,
 all great mourning for his Nevy he made:
 at all for nought, What might it him avail
 into war he wrought not his counsel.
 Wallace rode forth, with his two yeomen past,
 the summer-man he followed wonder fast:
 Cathcart he over-hyed them again,
 when knew they well that it was he in plain,
 the horse and weed had argued them before,
 and then to them returned withouten more.
 Wallace to ground from his Courser can glyde,
 the brand he braided out that tyde:
 the master man with so good will strake he,
 the hat and head in sunder made he flee:
 the other fast upon the face he gave,
 the dead on ground but mercy soon him drave:
 the third he hit with great yre in that stead,
 on the field he hath him left for dead:
 Wallace slew three, by that his yeomen wight
 the other two derfly to death had dight:
 when spulvied they the harnesse ere they wend,
 silver and gold they got enough to spend.
 the jewels they took the best were chosen there,
 the good horse and gear, then on their way can fare.
 then Wallace said, At some strength would I be,
 over Clyde that time was a good bridge of tree,
 either they past in all their goodly might,
 the day was gone and coming was the night,
 they durst not well neer still by *Glasgow* byde;
 the *Lennox* he took purpose to ride.
 and so he did, then lodged there that night,
 they best might, while that the day was light:

To an Hostillarie he went and sojourn'd there,
With true *Scots* that his near friends were.
The Counsell met right gladly on the morn,
But feil tydings were brought to *Perse* beforne
His men were slain, his treasure als was rest,
Wich feil *Scots*, and them no Jewels left:
They deemed about of that derf doubtfull case
The *Sutherland* said, Forsooth it is *Wallace*.
The Sheriffs Court was coming to the Town,
And he was one for *Scot* of most renown.
They gart seek Sir *Rannald* in that rage,
But he was still then at his Harbarage.
Some wise men said, thereof nothing he kend,
The men were slain here at the towns end.
Sir *Rannald* came by nine houres of the day,
Before the *Perse*, and his men brought were the
They followed him of felony that was wroug
The assyse to him of this could say right nough
They deemed about thereof that felon case,
Before the Judge there he denyed *Wallace*:
And so he might, he wist not where he was.
From this Counsel my purpose is to passe.
OF *Wallace* to speak in wildernesse so wide,
The Lord God be his governour and guide
Still at that place four days he sojourned hail,
When tydings came to him from that Counsel.
Then statute they in each stead of the West,
In these bounds *Wallace* should have no rest.
His dear Uncle a great oath made him swear:
That he but leave, no friendship should him beare
And many other, full wo was that day,
And *Robert Boyde* stole off the town away:

and Cleland als, before with him had been,
 they had far rather see him with their een,
 living on life, as they knew him before,
 then of pure gold a million and more.
 And wept sore, and said, Our Lord is gone,
 amongst his foes is set all him alone.
 Then Cleland said, False Fortune changes fast,
 that God since we with him had ever past.
 And Little to Annandaile is went,
 and wist right nought of this new judgement :
 And Wallace bode still in Richartown,
 fell it thus with Wallace of renown:
 with his power parted marvelously,
 Fortune of chance over-turns doubly.
 Their piteous moan as then could not be bet,
 they wist no whit wher that they should him get:
 Next the place where he in lodging lay :
 Earle Malcome he went upon a day :
 the Lennox whole he held into his hand,
 King Edward then had he not made band :
 the land was strait and masterfull to win,
 and men of armes that time was it within :
 The Lord was traist, the men sikker and true,
 in weak power they durst him nor persue.
 At glad he was of Wallace company,
 welcomed him fair with worship reverently :
 his own will desired if he would
 bide there still, Master of his household;
 All his men he should whole Chifrain be.
 Wallace answered, It were enough for me,
 not bide, my mind is set on plain,
 to be, or else to die in pain.

Our West-Countrey, their statute is so strang,
Into the North my purpose is to gang.
Steven of Ireland into the *Lennox* was,
And wight *Wallace* ordained him to passe;
And others als that born was of *Argile*.
Wallace still there made residence a while,
While men it wist, and sembled soon him till :
He charged none, but at their own good will.
Though they were strangers, he could not the
But received them all in his wars to lead. (drew
Some part of them was then in *Ireland* born,
That *Mackfadzean* had exiled out befor :
King *Edwards* man he was sworn of *Ireland*,
Of right low birth, suppose he took in hand.
To *Wallace* there came one that heght *Fawdon*,
Of melancholy, and evil of complexion,
Heavy of stature, and dour countenance,
Sorrowfull was ay, in dread without pleasance.
Wallace received what men would come him till
The bodily oath they made him with good will,
Before the Earle, all in one concord,
And him received as their Captain and Lord.
His speciall men that came with him from hame
The one heght *Gray*, the other *Keirly* by name
In his service came first in all their main,
To *Lowdown-hill*, where that *Fenwick* was slaid
He them commanded ay next him to pursue,
For he them kend right hardy, wise, and true;
His leave he took right on a fair manner,
The good Earle then he bade him gifts feir :
Wallace would none, but gave of his feil syle,
To poor and rich on a goodly wise.

humble he was, hardy, wise, and free,
 and of riches he held no property.
 of honour and worship he was a mirrour kende;
 of gold he had abundantly to spend:
 upon his foes he wan it worthily.
 Thus *Wallace* past, and his good Chevalry,
 of which he had of likely men at wage,
 through the *Lennox* he led them with courage,
 about *Lekkie* he lodged them in a vaile,
 strength there was which they thought to assail.
 In *Gargunnoch* there bigged was a Peel,
 that stuffed was with men and victual well,
 within a dyke, close chamber, and a hall,
 captain thereof to name heght *Thirlwall*.
 They led *Wallace* where that this bigged was,
 sought to essay, further ere he would passe:
 so spyers he sent to visie all the Land,
 that loath he was the thing to take in hand,
 the which by force that should go him again,
 wher he had through aventure be slain:
 their men went forth when it was large mid-night
 about the house they spyed all at right.
 the watch-men heavy were, and fallen asleep,
 the bridge was drawn, that the entry should keep:
 labourers late reklesly went in,
 these men returned withoutten noise or din,
 to their Master, and told what they had seen:
 in grait heed he soon these men of arms keen,
 on foot unto the house they sought,
 entered in, for letting had they nought.
 the men essayed with all their busie cure,
 the bar was drawn athort the door;



But they might not it break out of the wa.
Wallace was grieved when he such carry saw :
Some part annoyed wrathly to it he went,
By force of hands it raised out of the sprent.
Three ells of breadth als of the wall pulled out,
Then marvelled all his men that were about,
How he did more then twenty of them might,
Then with his foot the gate he strake up right,
While brace and bands he bursted all at anes :
Frayedly they rose that were within those wane
A watch-man had a fellaon staff of steel,
At *Wallace* strake, but he kept him right well,
Rudely from him he rest it in the thrang.
Dang out his brains, then in the dyke him slang.
The remanent by that were on their feet,
Thus *Wallace* soon can with the Captain meet,
The staff he had heavy, and forged new,
With that *Wallace* upon the head him drew,
While bone and brain all in sunder yeed.
His men entred, that worthy were indeed,
In hands hint, and sticked all the lave :
Wallace commanded, they should no wearmen fa
Twenty and two they sticked in that stead.
Women and bairns, when that the men were de
He caul'd be tane, and kept in close full well,
That they thereout might have thereof no feil.
The dead bodies they put soon out of sight,
Took up the bridge ere that the day was light,
In that place bode four days ere he would passe
Wist none thereout how that the manner was :
Spoiled that stead and took them gaining gear,
Jewels and gold away with them they bear.

When he thought time, they ished in the night,
 To the next wood they went with all their might.
 The Captains wife, women, and children three,
 Asst where they would, for *Wallace* left them free.
 That Forreist he liked not to bide,
 They bowed them over Forth to ride :
 The Mosse was strong, to ride it was no boot.
Wallace was wight, and lighted on his foot :
 Few horse they had, little thereof they rought,
 To save their lives, feil strengths oft they sought.
Steven of Ireland was their guide that night,
 Toward *Kinkardin*, syn rested there at right,
 In that Forreist which was both long and wyde,
 Which from the Mosse grew to the vvater side :
 After the Sun, *Wallace* vvalked about
 Upon *Teth* side, vvhere he savv many a rout
 Of vvild beasts vvavering in vvood and plain :
 Soon at a shot a great Hart hath he slain.
 Flew fire off flint, and graithed thereat right,
 Suddenly their fresh Vennison they dight :
 Victuall they had, both bread and vvine so clear,
 With o her stuff enough at their dinneir.
 The staff of steel he gave *Keirly* to keep,
 Then past they over the water of *Teth* so deep,
 Into *Strathern* they entred suddenly,
 In covert past ere *Sutherland* should them spy :
 Whom that they found of *Scotlands* adversours,
 Without respect vvvas come their fatal hours.
 Whom ever they met vvvas at the *English* fay,
 They flew all down, vvithoutten more delay.
 They spared none that vvvas of *English* blood,
 To death he yeed, though he vvvere never so good.

This was the grace that *Wallace* to them gave :
They saved none, Knight, Squyer, nor yet knave
But wasted all by worthinesse of wear.
Of that party that might bear bow or spear.
Some part by flight, some part by force they flew
But *Wallace* thought they wasted never anew.
Silver they took, and als gold as they fand,
Other good gear full lightly red from hand.
Cutted throats, syn in Peit-pots them cast,
Put out of sight, for that they thought was best
At the *Black-furd* as they should then passe ov'r
A Squyer came, and with him beirns four,
To *Down* should ride, and weind that they had
All *Englishmen*, that he before had seen : (been
Tydings to speir, he hoved them among :
~~Wallace~~ therewith a good sword out he swong,
Upon his head he strake with so great ire,
Through bone and brain in sunder strake the lyre
The other four in hands soon were hint,
Dersly to death sticked ere they would stint.
The horse they took, and what they liked best,
Spoiled them bare, syn in a bog them kest.
Of this matter no more tarry they made,
But forth their way passed without abade,
These warlike *Scots* all with one consent. (went
So North over *Erne* out through the land they
In *Methwin* wood, their lodging took that night
Upon the morn when that the day was light,
Wallace rose up, and went to the Forrest side,
Where that he saw some wilde beasts abide,
Of wilde and tame walking abundantly :
Then *Wallace* said, This Countrey liketh me,

ear men may do with food that they should have
 at want they meat, they seek not for the lave.
 f dainty fare *Wallace* took never keep,
 at as it came, welcome was meat and sleep.
 ometime he had great sufficiency within,
 ow want, now have, now loss, now sometime win;
 ow light, now sad, now blyth, and now in baile;
 o haste, now hurt, now sorrow, and now haile,
 ow waile and weil, now cold weather, now heit:
 ow moist, now drouth, & wav'ring wind, now wet
 o fares with him for *Scotlands* right full even,
 n fell debate, seven years and moneths seven.
 When he wan peace, and left *Scotland* in plain,
 hen *Englishmen* made new conquest again.
 n frustrate terms I will not tarry lang.

Wallace again unto his men can gang,
 And said, Here is a land of great bundance,
 Thanked be **GOD** of his hie purveyance.
 even of you feirs, graith soon, and go with me;
 Right fore I lang *Saint Johnstoun* for to see.

CHAP. II. *How Wallace past to Saint John-*
stoun, and slew the Captain, and wan Kinclevin.
S *Teven of Ireland*, as **GOD** of heaven thee save,
 Maister and leader I make thee of the leave :
 Keep well my men, let none out of thy sight,
 While I gang hither, and come with all my might,
 Bide we seven days into this Forrest strong,
 Ye may get food, suppose I dwel so long:
 Some part ye have, and **GOD** will send you mair.
 Thus turned he, and to the town can fare :
 The Maire kepted the port of the village,
Wallace knew well, and sent him his message.

The Mair was brought, saw him a goodly man,
Right reverently he hath received him than.
At him he asked, All *Scots* if that ye be.
Wallace said, Yea, and it is peace trow me.
I grant, he said, that likes us wonder well,
True men of peace must ay some friendship feel.
What is your name? I pray you tell me it.
William Malcome, he said, since ye would wit
In *Erick Forrest* hath my winning been,
There was I born among the shawes sheen.
Now I desire this North-land for to see,
Where I might find better dwelling for me.
The Mair said, Sir, I ask it for none ill,
But feil rydings oft times is brought us till,
Of one *Wallace*, that born was in the West,
Our Kings men he holds at great unrest :
Martyrs them down, great pity is to see,
Out of the crews forsooth I trow he be.
Wallace said then, we hear speak of that man,
Tydings to you of him tell nought I can.
For him he gart an Innes well graithed be,
Where none should come but his own men and he
The Stewart *Keirly* brought them in fusion,
Good things enough, the best was in the town.
Als *Englishmen* to drinking would him call,
And commonly he dealt not therewithall,
In their presence he spended reasonably,
Yet for himself he pay'd abundantly :
On *Scots* men he spended mickle good,
None with his will upon the *Sutheron* blood.
Soon he conceived in his wit privily,
Into that town who was of most party.

James Butler, an aged cruel Knight,
 kept Kinclevin, a Castle wonder wight.
 Son Sir John, that dwelt into that town,
 Under Captain to Sir Gerard Heroun,
 The women als he visit at the last,
 And so on one his eyes began to cast,
 The South-gate a fellow ferlie fair :
 Wallace to her made privately repaire.
 Told it thus, from the town ere he past,
 An accord they happened at the last,
 Wallace with her in secret made him glad :
 Thereon wist not that he such pleasure had.
 At on the night he would say to himself,
 This is far worse then any pain of hell,
 Not thus with wrong these devils brook our Land,
 And I with force may not against them stand :
 To take this town, my power is too small,
 Great peril als of my life may befall :
 Let it on fire it will undo my sell,
 Or lose my men, there is no more to tell.
 The gates are closed, the dykes are deep withall,
 Though I would swim, forsooth they cannot all,
 This matter here, therefore I will let slide,
 For at this time I may no longer bide.
 All men him told the Captain was to passe
 Come to Kinclevin, whereof right glad he was.
 His leave he took at Heirs of the town,
 The Methwin-wood right gladly made them bown :
 His horn he hint, and blythly bowned to blaw :
 His men him heard, and there soon can they draw.
 Right blyth he was, for they were hail and feir,
 Any at him of ay dings would not speir.

He them commanded for to make ready fast,
In good array out of the wood they past,
Toward *Kinlevin* they bowned them that tide
Then in the vaile that near was them beside,
Fast upon *Tay* his bushment can he draw,
In a dern wood he stelled them on raw.
Set scurriours out the Countrey to espy,
But soon ere noon there came fore riders by.
The watch turned to see what was his will.
He them commanded in covert hold them still :
And we skail forth, the house will knowledge have
And that may soon be warning to the lave.
All force in war doth nought but grievance.
Wallace was few, but happy was his chance :
Made him feil syse his adversours to win.
By that the Court of *Englishmen* came in :
Four score and ten well graithed in their gear,
Harnesse on horse, as likely men of wear.
Wallace saw well that number was no mo,
He thanked God, and then the field can to.
The *English* marvel'd greatly what they shold be
But fra they saw, they made them for mellie :
In rest they cast sharp spears in that tide,
In over they thought out over the *Scots* to ride.
Wallace and his went over them again,
At the first rush feil *Sutheron* were slain :
Wallace strake one with his good spear of steel,
Throughout the coast that shaft frushed ilk deal.
A birnisht brand in haste then hint he out,
Thrice upon foot he throng through all the rout.
Stern horse they stiked, should men of arms beat,
In under foot was feil men of wear.

Butler lighted himself for to defend.
With men of arms, which were full worthy ken l.
On either side feil frieks were fighting fast,
The Captain bade, though he was sore agist :
Part of the *Scots* through worthinesse they slew,
Wallace was wo, and toward him he drew :
His men then dred, the *Butler* bold and keen,
On him he fought with yre and proper teen,
Upon the head he strake in maltalent,
The birnisht blade throughout his balnet went,
Both bone and brain he bursted through his weed :
Thus *Wallace* hand delivered them of that dread :
Yet feil on fold was fighting fellonly,
Steven of Ireland, and all the Chevalry,
Into that stour did worthily and well,
And *Keirly* als with his good staff of steel.
The *Englishmen* fra their Chifstain was slain,
They lett the held, and fled in all their main.
Three score wer slain ere they wold leave the stead,
The Heeand folk they wist of no remead ;
But take the house, they fled in all their might.
The *Scots* followed, that worthy were and wighty,
Few men of fence was left that place to keep.
Women and Priests upon the wall can weep,
For well they weined the Heears was their Lord,
To take them in, they made them ready ford :
Let down the bridge, cast up the gates wide,
The frayed folk entred, that durst not bide :
Good *Wallace* ever followed them so fast,
While in the house he entred at the last.
The gate he wore, while coming was the rout,
Of *English* and *Scots* he held no man thereout,

The *Englishmen* that winned in that stead,
 Withoutten grace they brittended them to dead.
 The Captains wife, women, and Priests two,
 And young children, forsooth they saved no mo.
 Held them in close after this sudden case,
 Ere *Sutherland* men should siege them in that place.
 Took up the bridge, and gates closed fast,
 The dead bodies out of sight the caus'd cast,
 Within the house and without that were dead.
 Five of his own to bury he caus'd lead.
 In that Castle seven dayes still bode he.
 In every night they spoiled busily :
 To *Shortwood-shames* led wines and victual wight
 And household gear, both gold and silver bright.
 Women, and they to whom he granted grace,
 When he thought time, they put out of the place.
 When they had tane what liked them to have,
 Strake down the gate, and set on fire the lave.
 Out of the windows the stanchers all they drew,
 Full great iron wark into the water threw.
 Buirdin doors and locks in their ire,
 All work of tree they burnt into the fire.
 Spilt what they might, brake brig & bulwark down
 To *Shortwood-shams* in haste they made the bown.
 Chooosed a strength, wher they their lodging made.
 In good effair a while still there he bade.
 Yet in the town of this no wit had they.
 The countrey folk, when it was light of day,
 Great smoak saw rise, and to *Kinlevin* they soght
 But wals & stone, more good there found they not.
 The Captains wife to *Saint Iohnstoun* she yeed,
 And to *Sir Gerard* told this fellow deed.

Als to her son what hapned was by case:
Then deemed they all that it was wight *Wallace*,
Before time there he spyed had the town:
Then charged they all should be ready bown,
Harneft on horse into their armour clear,
To seek *Wallace*, they went all forth in fear:
A thousand men well garnisht for the weir,
Toward the wood, right awfull in effeir.

CHAP. III. *Short-wood-shawes.*

TO *Short-wood-shaw*, and set it all about,
With five stails, that stalwart were and stout.
The sixt they made a fellon range to lead,
Where *Wallace* was full worthy ay indeed.
The strength they took, and bade them hold it still;
On every side assailye who so will.
Sir *John Butler* into that Forrest went,
With two hundred, sore moved in his intent,
His fathers death to venge him if he mought,
To *Wallace* soon with men of arms he sought:
A Cleugh there was, whereof a strength they made
With thortour trees, and boldly there abade:
From the one side they might ish to the plain,
Then throgh the wood to the strength pass again.
Twenty he had that noble Archers were,
Against seven score of *English* Bow-men faire.
Three score of spears near hand them bode ful right:
If *Scots* issued to help them at their might:
On *Wallace* set a bicker bold and keen:
A bow he bare, was big, and well beseen:
And arrows als, both sharp and lang with aw,
No man there was that *Wallace* bow could draw:
Right strong he was, and in full sober gear,
Boldly he shot among those men of wear.

An angle head into the hooks he drew,
Then at one shot, the foremost he slew.
English Archers that hardy were and wight,
Against the *Scots* bickered with all their might,
Their awfull shot was fellon for to bide :
Of *Wallace* men they wounded feil that tide.
Few of them was sikker of archery :
Better they were, and they got even party,
In field to bide, either with sword or spear.
Wallace perceived his men took mickle dear :
He gart them change, and stand not in that stead.
He cast always to save them from the dead.
Full great travel upon himself took he,
Of *Sutherland* Archers feil men gart he die.
Of *Long-castle-Shire* bow-men were in that place,
A sore Archer ay waited on *Wallace* :
At an open where he used to repair,
At him he drew a sikker shot and fair,
Under the chin through a Collar of steel,
On the left side, and hurt his halse some deal :
Astonied he was, but not greatly agast,
Wallace him saw, and followed him full fast,
And in the turning with good will hach him cane.
Upon the craig, in sunder broke the bane,
Then feil of them no friendship with him fand,
Fifteen that day he shot dead with his hand.
By that his arrows wasted were and gone,
The *English* Archers forsooth they wanted none.
Out-with they were their power to renew,
On every side they could to them pursue.
William Loran came with his bousteous stail,
Out of *Gowrie*, on *Wallace* to assail :

Revoy he was, as it was known plain,
To the *Butler* before that they had slain:
To venge his Eme, he came with all his might;
Three hundreth led of men in arms bright,
To lead the range, on foot he made him ford.
Wallace to God his confidence couth remord,
Then comfort them with manly countenance:
Ye see, he said, good Sirs, their ordinance:
Here is no choise, but either do or die,
We have the right, the happier may it be,
That we shall scape by grace out of this Land;
Loran by that was ready at his hand:
By this it was afternoon of the day:
Feil men of wit to counsell soon yeed they.
The *Sutherland* cast sharply on every side,
He saw the wood was neither long nor wide.
Lightly they said, He should it hold so lang,
Five hundreth made on foot through it to gang.
Sad men of, arms that eager were of will,
About the *Scots* with many shout full shril,
With bow and spear, and swords stiff of steel,
On either side no friendship could they feel.
Wallace in ire a buirly brand can draw,
Where feil *Sutherland* were sembled on a raw,
To fend his men with his dear worthy hand:
The folk were fey that he before him fand:
Through the thickest of the great preasse he past,
Upon his enemies he went wonder fast,
Against his dints no weeds might avail,
Whom so he hit was dead withoutten fail.
Of the fiercest full braichly dang he down,
Before the *Scots* that were of great renown.

To hold the strength they prest with al their might
Then *Englishmen* that worthy were and wight,
Sir John Butler relieved in again,
Sundered the *Scots*, and did them miekle paine.
The *Loran* als that cruel was and keen,
A sore essay forsooth there might be seen.
Then at the strength they might no longer bide,
The range so strong came upon either side.
In the thickest wood they made their fell defence
Against their foes so full of violence :
Right feil *Sutherland* there left their life in wed,
To a new strength *Wallace* and his men fled :
On his adversaires they made full fell debate,
To help themselves, none other succour they wate.
The *Sutherland* als were sundred then in twin,
But they again together soon can win.
Full subtilly their ordinance they made,
To range again they bowned but more abade.
The *Scots* were hurt, and part of them were slain
Then *Wallace* said, We labour all in vain :
To slay Commons it helps us right nought,
But their Chistains that have them hither brought
Might we work so, that one of them were slain
So sore essay they could not get again :
By this the host approaching was full near,
Thus they them held full manly upon fear.
When *Wallace* saw the *Sutherland* were at hand,
Him thought no time longer for to stand.
Right manfully he graithed hath his gear,
Sadly he went against these men of wear :
Throughout the stour full fast fighting he sought
With Gods grace to venge him if he mought :

upon the *Butler* awfully strak he,
 aseguard he got under a bowing tree,
 he branch in two he strake above his head.
 As to the ground he felled him in that stead.
 The whole power upon him came so fast,
 that they by force rescued him at the last.
Loran was wo, and thither fast can draw,
Wallace returned so suddenly he him saw,
 but at a side full fast to him he yeed,
 he got no girth for all his birnisht weed :
 With yre him strake on his gorget of steel,
 the trenching blade it pierced every deal :
 through plate and stuff might not against it stand,
 verfly to death he left him on the land.
 Him have they lost, though *Sutherland* had it sworn,
 for his craig-bone was all in sunder thorn.
 The worthy *Scots* did nobly that day,
 about *Wallace* while he was won away.
 He took the strength against their foes will,
 abundantly in bargan bade them still.
 The sery soon rose the bold *Loran* was dead,
 for *Gerard Heroun* tranoynted to that stead.
 And all the host assembled him about :
 At the north side then *Wallace* issued out
 with his good men, and bowned them to go,
 thanking great God that they were parted so.
 Even of his men that day to death were dight :
 To *Cargill Wood* they went that self same night,
 to the field west of the *Sutherland* six score,
 and *Loran* als, that mourning was the more.
 The range in haste they raised soon again :
 at when, they saw their travel was in vain.

When

When it was past, full mickle moan they made,
To ryde the wood, both vale, flonk, and flaid ;
For *Butlers* gold, *Wallace* took care before,
But they found nought, would they seek evermore
His horse they got, but nought else of his gear :
With dolefull moan return'd these men of wear,
To *Saint Iohnstoun*, with sorrow and great care,
Of *Wallace* forth, me likes to speak no mair.
The second night the *Scots* could them draw,
Right privatly again to *Short-wood-shaw* :
Took up their good which was put out of sight,
Cloathing and stuff, both gold and silver bright.
Upon their feet, for horse was tane them fro,
Ere the sun rose, to *Methwen-wood* can go,
The two days over their lodging still they made,
On the third night they moved but more abade.

CHAP. IV. *How Wallace was sold to the
Englishmen by his Lemman.*

TO *Elchok* Park full suddenly they went,
There in that strength to bide was his intent
Then *Wallace* said, He would go to the town,
Arrayed him well into a Priests gown,
Into *Saint Iohnstoun* disguised can he fare,
To this Woman, the which he spake of aire :
Of his presence she right rejoyced was,
And ay in dread how he away should passe.
He sojourn'd there from noon was of the day,
While near the night, ere that he went his way,
He trysted her when he should come again,
On the third day, then was she wonder fain :
Yet he was seen with enemies as he yeed :
To Sir *Guard* they told of all his deed :

and to the *Butler* that would have wroken been:
 when they canſd take that woman fair and ſheen;
 cauſed her ſore of reſet into that place :
 all oſt ſhe ſwore, that ſhe knew not *Wallace*.
 when *Butler* ſaid, We wot well it was he,
 and but thou tell, in bail-fire thou ſhalt die.
 thou wilt help to bring yon *Rebald* down,
 we ſhal thee make a Lady of renown.
 they gave to her both gold and ſilver bright :
 and ſaid, She ſhould be wedded to a Knight,
 whom ſhe deſired, that was but marriage.
 muſtrempted they her throgh counſel & great wage
 that ſhe them told what night he ſhould be there.
 when they were glad, for they deſir'd no mair,
 all *Scotland* but *Wallace* at their will.
 thus ordained they that pointment to fulfill :
 all men of arms they graithed haſtily,
 to keep the gates, wight *Wallace* to eſpy.
 the ſet tryſt, he entred in the town,
 getting nothing of all this falſe treaſons
 in her chamber he went but more abade,
 he welcomed him, and full great pleaſance made.
 that that they wrought, I cannot graithly ſay,
 right unperfect I am of *Venus* play :
 at haſtily he bowned him to gang,
 when ſhe him took, and aſkt, If he thought lang?
 he aſked him, that night with her to bide.
 on he ſaid, Nay, for chance that may betide :
 y men are left at miſrule all for me,
 may not ſleep this night while I them ſee.
 when weeped ſhe, and ſaid full oſt, Alace,
 that I was made, wo worth the curſed caſe.

Now

Now have I lost the best man living is :
O feeble mind, to do so foul a misse !
O waried wit, wicked, and variance,
That me hath brought in this mischievous chan-
Alace, she said, in world that I was wrought,
If all this pain on my self might be brought.
I have served to be burnt in a gleid.
When *Wallace* saw she near from wit couth we
In his arms he caught her soberly,
Who hath done ought, he said, dear heart, have
No, I, quoth she, have falsly wrought this tra
I have you sold, right now ye shal be slain.
She told to him her treason to an end,
As I have said, what needs more legend ?
At her he askt, If she fore-thought it fore :
Yea, Sir, she said, and shall do evermore,
My waried wierd in world I must fulfill,
To mend this misse, I would burn on a hill.
He comfort her, and bade her have no dread.
I will, he said, have some part of thy weed.
Her gown on him he took, and courches als,
Wil. God, I shall escape this treason false.
I thee forgive, withoutten words mair :
He kissed her, then took his leave to fare.
His buirly brand helped him oft in need,
Right privarly hid it under his weed.
To the South-gate the gainest way he drew,
Where that he found of armed men anew,
To them he told, dissimulate in countenance,
To the chamber, where he was in perchance,
Speed fast, he said, *Wallace* is locked in.
For him they fought withoutten noise or din.

that same house about they can him cast,
 out of the gate then *Wallace* got full fast.
 right glad in heart when that he was without :
 right fast he yeed, a sture pace and stout.
 two men beheld, and said, We will go see :
 stalwart Quean, forsooth, yon seems to be.
 they folow'd him throgh the south inch they two.
 when *Wallace* saw with them there came no mo,
 gain he turned, and hath the formest slain :
 the other fled, then *Wallace* with great main,
 on the head with his sword hath him tane,
 eft them both dead, then to the strength is gane;
 his men he got, right glad when they him saw,
 to their defence in halte he caul'd them draw :
 devoyded him soon out of the womans weed.
 thus escaped be out of this fellow dread.

The end of the Fourth Book.



THE FIFTH BOOK.

CHAP. I.

*How Wallace escaped out of Saint-Johnstoun, and
 past to Elchok Park, and how he flew Fawdown.*

THe dark Region appeared wonder fast,
 In November, when October was past :
 The days fall through right course waxed
 so banishe men, that is no great comfort, (short
 with their power to seir place that worths gang,
 cavy they think when that the night is lang :

Thus

Thus *Wallace* saw the nights messenger,
Phœbus had lost his fiery brands clear :
Out of the Wood they durst not turn that tyde
For adversaries that in their way would byde.
Wallace then told anew, were on his hand,
The *English-men* were of the town command :
The door brake they wher they trowd *Wallace* went
when they him missed, they bowned hence to pass
In this great noise the woman got away,
But to what stead, I cannot graithly say.
The *Sutheron* sought right sadly for that stead,
Throgh the south-inch, & found their two mē dead
They knew by that *Wallace* was in the strength,
About the Park they set on breadth and length,
With six hundreth well graithed in their arms,
All likely men to wreak them of their harms.
An hundreth men charged in arms strong,
To keep an Hound, that they had them among :
In *Gelderland* there was that bratchet bred,
Sikker of scent, to follow them that fled.
She was so used in *Eske* and *Lidde(daile)*,
While she had blood, no fleeing might availe.
Then said they all, *Wallace* might not away,
He should be theirs, for ought that he do may.
The host they left in diverse parts that tyde,
Sir *Gerard Heroun* in the stail can byde :
Sir *Iohn Butler* the range he took him till,
With three hundred which were of hardy will,
Into the wood upon *Wallace* they yeed,
The worthy *Scots* that were in meikel dread,
Sought to a place, for to have issued out,
And saw the stail environed them about.

gain they went with hideous stroaks and strong,
 great noise and din was raised them among :
 their cruel death right marvellous to ken,
 where forty marcht against three hundred men.
 Wallace so well upon him took that tyde,
 through the great preass a way he made full wide
 helping the Scots with his dear worthy hand :
 heil foe men he left fey upon the land.
 yet Wallace lost fifteen into that stead,
 and forty men of Sutherland there vvas dead :
 the Butlers folk so frushed vvere indeed.
 the hardy Scots to the strengths throgh they yeed
 upon Tay side they halted them full fast,
 vwill they vvere the vwater to have past.
 better him thought in peril for to be
 upon the land, then vvilfully to see
 his men to drovvn, vwhere rescue might be none :
 again in yre to the field are they gone.
 Butler by then had put his men in array,
 on them he set with hardy avvful essay,
 on either side with vveapons stiff of steel.
 Wallace again no friendship let them feel,
 at do or die, they vvist no more succour.
 thus fend they long into that stalwart stoure,
 the Scots Chifftain vvas young and in a rage,
 fed in vvar, and fights vvith high courage :
 he savv his men of Sutherland take such vvrang,
 them to revenge all dreadlesse he did gang :
 for many of them vvere bleeding vvonder fare,
 he could not see no help appearing there.
 at if their Chifftain vvere put out of their gate,
 the brim Butler so boldly made debate :

Through

Through the great preass, right fast to him
His awfull dead avenge it if he mought. (sought)
Under an oak with men about him set,
Wallace might not a great stroak on him get,
Yet shed he them: a full rude step he made:
The *Scots* went out, no longer there they bade
Steven of *Ireland* that worthy was and wight,
To help *Wallace* he did full preasse and might,
With true *Keirly*, doughty in many deed,
Upon the ground feil *Sutherland* they gart bleed.
Sixty were slain of *Englishmen* in that place,
And nine of *Scots* were tint into that case.
Butlers men were so destroyed that tide,
Into the stour they would no longer byde,
To get supply he went into the stail,
Thus lost he there an hundred of great avail.
As they were best arraying *Butlers* rout,
Betwixt parties then *Wallace* issued out.
Sixteen with him they graiched them to go,
Of all his men he had leaved no mo.
The *Englishmen* have missed him, in hy
The hound they took, and followed hastily,
At the *Gask wood* full fain they would have been
But this flouth-hound that cruel was and keen,
On *Wallace* foot he followed wonder fast,
While in their sight approached at the last.
Their horse was wight, and sojourned right lang
To the next wood they had two miles to gang.
Of upward ground, they yeed with al their might
Good hope they had, for it was near the night.
Fawdown he tyred, and said, he might not gang
Wallace was wo to leave him in the thrang:

he bade him go, and said, the strength was near,
 that he therefore would not the faster fear :
 Wallace in yre on the craig can him ta,
 with his good sword, and strake his head in twa :
 headlesse to ground he duffed to the dead,
 from him he lap, and left him in that stead :
 some deems it to evil, and some to good,
 but I say here into these termes rude,
 better it was he did, as thinks me :
 first, to the Hound it may great stopping be,
 as *Fawdown* was holden of great suspicion,
 for he was holden of bruckle complexion.
 right strong he was, and had but little gone,
 thus *Wallace* wist, had he been left alone :
 and he were false to enemies he would ga,
 he were true, the *Sutheron* would him sla :
 right he do nought, but lose him as it was.
 from this question now shortly will I passe.
 seem as ye list, ye that can best, and may s
 at I rehearse, as mine Author doth say.
 the stars as then began for to appear,
 the *Englishmen* were coming wonder near.
 ve hundred whole were in their Chevalry,
 to the next strength then *Wallace* can him hye :
 even of *Ireland* unwitting of *Wallace*,
 and good *Keirly* bode still near hand that place,
 the Mure-side into a scroggie flaid,
 y east *Duplin*, where they this carry made.
Fawdown was left beside them on the land :
 the power came, and suddenly him fand,
 for their sleuth-hound the graith way to him yeed,
 of other dread as then she took no heed.

The sleuth stopped, at *Fawdown* still she stood,
No further would, from time she found the blood
The *Englishmen* deem'd, for other they could not
But that the *Scots* had foughten among them
Right wo they were, for loss'd was their scent
Wallace two men among the Host in went,
Dissembled well, that no man should them ken
Right in effeir, as they were *Englishmen*.
Keirly beheld unto the bold *Heroun*,
Upon *Fawdown* as he was looking down :
A subtil stroak upward him took that tyde,
Under the cloak the grounded sword can glyde,
By the good malzie, both craig and halse-bane
In sunder strake, thus ended this Chiscain.
To ground he fell, feil folk about him throng :
Treason they cryed, a traitour us among.
Keirly with that fled out at the host-side,
His fellow *Steven* thought it no time to bide.
The fray was great, and fast away they yeed
Both toward *Ern*: thus scaped they that dread.
Butler was wo, of weeping might not stint.
Thus rekleßly this good Knight have they rint.
They deemed all that it was *Wallace* men,
Or else himself, though they should not him ken
He is right near, we shall him have but fail,
The feeble wood may little him avail.
Fourty there past again to *Saint Johnstown*,
With dead corps to burrying made them bowne
Parted their men, and diverse wayes yeed :
A great power at *Duplin* still there bade.
To *Dalreach* the *Butler* past but let,
At fundry parts the gate was unbeset.

to keep the wood while it was day they thought:
Wallace thus in the thick Forrest he sought
 for his two men, in mind he had great pain:
 he wist not well if they were tane or slain,
 escaped whole by any jeopardie:
 thirteen were left, with him no mo had he.
 Gask ball there, their lodging have they tane:
 ere they got soon, but meat then had they nane,
 two sheep they took beside them in a fold,
 ordained their supper into that seemly hold:
 cricht in haste, some meat to them was dight,
 heard they blow rude horns upon hight:
 two sent he forth to see what it might be:
 they bade right long, but no tydings got he,
 at busteous noise, so brimly blowing fast:
 other two into the wood forth past.
 one came again, but busteously can blow,
 to great ire he sent them forth in row.
 then that alone *Wallace* was leaved there,
 he awfull blast abounded mickle mair:
 then trow'd he well they had his lodging seen
 his sword he drew of noble mettall keen,
 then forth he went where that he heard the horns:
 without the door *Fawdown* was him beforne,
 to his sight, his head into his hand.
 crosse he made when that he saw him stand:
Wallace in the head he swakked there,
 and he in haste soon hint it by the hair,
 then out again at him he could it cast:
 to his heart he was greatly agast.
 ght well he trowed it was no sp'rit of man,
 was a devil that such malice began.

He wist no avail there longer to abide,
Up through the hall thus wight *Wallace* can gly
To a close stair, the buirds rais in twinne,
Fifteen foot long he lap forth of that Inne :
Up the water then suddenly can he fare,
Again he blenked what appearance was there :
Him thought he saw *Fawdown* that ugly syre,
Upon the house, and all the rest on fire.
A great roof-tree he had into his hand,
Wallace as then no longer he would stand.
Of his good men full great marveil had he,
How that they were tint through his fantasie,
Trusting right well all this was sooth indeed,
Suppose that it be no point of the Creed.
Power they had with Lucifer that fell,
That time that he parted from heaven to hell.
By such mischief if his men might be lost,
Drowned or slain amongst the *English* host ;
Or what it was in likenesse of *Fawdown*,
Which brought his men to such confusion :
Or if the men ended in evil intent,
Some wicked sprite again for him were sent :
I can nought speak of such divinity,
To clerks I will let all such matters be.
But of *Wallace* on forth I will you tell,
When he was went out of this danger fell :
Yet glad he was that he escaped so,
But for his men great mourning can he ma.
Hait by himself to the Maker above,
Why he suffered his soul such matters prove ?
He wist not well if it were God's will,
Right or wrong his fortune to fulfill :

and it pleased God, he trowed it might not be,
 should be set in such perplexitie:
 the great courage in his minde ever drave,
 the Englishmen thinking a mends to have.
 he was thus walking by him alone,
 on Erne side, making a piteous moan:
 John Butler to watch the Furdy right,
 that from his men of Wallace had a fight:
 the mist was went, and to the mountains gone,
 to him he raid where that he made his moan;
 in loud he speired, What art thou walks this gate?
 true man, Sir, though my voyage be late:
 stands I passe from Down unto my Lord,
 John Psewart, the right who will record,
 Down is now, new comed from the King.
 then Butler said, this is a selcouth thing:
 thou leid, he said, thou hast been with Wallace.
 that thee know, ere thou come from this place.
 to him he start the Courser wonder wight,
 drew out his sword, then made him for to fight;
 above the knee good Wallace bath him tane,
 through thie and brain in sunder strake the bane,
 verily to ground the Knight fell on the land.
 Wallace the horse soon seased in his hand,
 in acward stroak then took him in that stead,
 as craig in two, thus was the Butler dead,
 an Englishman saw their Chifstain was slain,
 spear in rest he cast with all his main,
 in Wallace drave from the horse him to bear,
 early he wrought as worthy man of wear:
 the spear he wan withoutten more abaid,
 on horse he lap, and through a great rout raid,

To *Dalreach* then he knew the Furd full well.
Before him came feil stuffed into steel.
He strake the first but bade in the blasoun,
While horse and man all fleit the water down.
Another soon down from the horse he bare,
Stramped to ground, & drown'd withoutten mair.
The third he hit on the harnessse of steel,
Throughout the coast the spear it raif ilk deel.
The great power after him then can ride,
He saw no wisdom there longer to abide:
His birnisht brand braithly in hand he bare,
Whom he hit right, they followed him no mair;
To stuff the chase feil frieks followed fast;
But *Wallace* made the gayest ay agast.
The Mure he took, and through their power rede
The horse was good, but yet he had great drede
For failing him, ere he wan to a strength.
The chase was great stailed on breadth & length
Through strong dangers they had him ay in sight.
At the *Black-furd*, there *Wallace* down can light.
The horse stuffed, the way was deep and lang,
A large long while wightly on foot can gang.
Ere he was horsed, ryders about him cast,
He saw full well long time he might not last.
Sad men indeed upon him can renew,
Without recovery twenty that night he slew,
The fiercest ay rudely rebured he,
Keeped his horse, and right wisely can flee,
While that he came the mirkest Mure amang,
His horse gave over and would no further gang.
Wallace on foot took him with good intent,
The horse he slew ere that he further went,

That

at *Englishmen* of him should have no good,
 d left on foot, for well he understood :
Sutheron men on him should have no sight,
 high bather he past with all his might,
 rough the dark mure then from them barb he
 suddenly there came into his thoght, (soght,
 eat power did walk at *Strivling* bridge of tree:
 hing he said. No passage is for me.
 r fault of food, and I have fasted lang,
 o war-men now me thinks no time to gang:
Cambuskenneth I shall the water till,
 t God above do with me what he will.
 o this land I may no longer bide.
 rry he made some part on *Forths* side,
 ok off his weed, and graithed him but mair,
 s sword he bound that wonder sharply share,
 nong his gear, on his shoulders aloft :
 us in he went, to great God praying oft,
 f his good grace his cause to take in hand :
 ver the water he swam to the South-land,
 rayed him well, the season was right cold,
 r *Pisces* was into his dayes old.
 verthart he cast, to the *Tor-wood* he yeed;
 widow dwelt which helped him in need,
 ther he came ere day began to daw,
 o a widow, and privily can caw :
 hey spierd his name, but tel them would he not;
 hile she her self near to his language sought.
 om time she knew that it was wight *Wallace*,
 rejoiced she was, and thanked God of grace.
 he spiered soon, If he was his alone?
 ourning he said, As men now have I none.

She spiered then, Where that his men should be
Fair Dame, he said, Go get some meat to me :
I have fasted since yesterday at morn,
I dread full sore my men they be forlorn.
Great part of them I saw to the death brought.
She got him meat in all the haste she mough.
A woman he called, and als with her a child,
And bade them passe again these ways wilde,
To the *Gaskhall*, tydings for to speir,
If part was left of his men into fear,
And she should finde an horse soon in her gate :
He bade them see if that place stood in state.
Thereof to hear he had full great desire,
Because he thought it was all into fire.
They passed out withoutten tarry mair,
Him for to rest, *Wallace* remained there,
Refreshed he was with meat and drink, and heat,
Which caused him through natural course to sleep
Where he should sleep at the woman he spiered,
The widow had three sons that were leared :
First two of them she sent to keep *Wallace*,
He gart the third go soon to *Dunipace*,
And tell his Eme that he was hapned there :
The Parson came to see of his welfare :
Wallace to sleep was laid in the wood-side,
The two young men without him near could bide
The Parson came near hand, the manner saw,
They beckned to him what stead he should draw
The Rone was thick that *Wallace* slepted in,
About he went, and made but little din.
So at the last of him he had a sight,
Full privatly where that his bed was dight :

e him beheld, then said unto himsell,
 ere is a marvell who likes it for to tell :
 his is a Person of worthinesse of hand,
 oweth to stop the power of *England*.
 ow false Fortune, the misworker of all,
 y eventure hath given him a fall :
 hat he is left without supply of m^a,
 cruel wife with weapons might him sla.
Wallace him heard, with that the sleep over-past,
 ercely he rose, and said to him als fast :
 hou liest, false Priest, were thou a foe to me,
 would not dread such other ten as thee :
 have had more since yesterday at morn,
 hen such sixty assembled me beforne.
 is Em^e him took, and went forth with *Wallace*,
 e told to him all his most painfull case :
 his night, he said, I was left mine alone,
 n fell debate with enemies many one :
 GOD at his will, hath ay my life to keep,
 Over *Forth* I swam, that awfull is and deep :
 What I have had in war before this day,
 rison and pain (to this night) is but play :
 o beat I am with strakes sad and sore,
 he shrill water then burnt me mickle more :
 After great blood, throug heat & cold was wrought :
 hat of my life almost nothing, I rought.
 moan far more the tynsel of my men,
 Nor of my self, might I suffer such ten.
 The Parson said, Dear son, thou mayst see well,
 onger to strive, it helpeth never a deal :
 Thy men are lost, and none will with thee rise,
 For GOD his sake, make as I shall devine :

Take a Lordship whereon thou mayest live,
King *Edward* will great lands to thee give.
Uncle, he said, of such words no mair,
This is nothing but eeking of my care :
I like better to see the *Sutherland* die,
Then gold or land that they can give to me.
Trust thou right well, of war I shall not cease;
Untill the time I bring *Scotland* to peace,
Or die therefore, the plain to understand.
So came *Keirly*, and good *Steven* of *Ireland*;
The widows son to *Wallace* he them brought,
Fra they him saw, of no sadnesse they rought :
For perfect joy they weeped with their een,
To ground they fell, and thanked heavens King.
Als he was glad for rescue of them two,
Of their feirs living were left no mo.
They told to him that *Sir Gerard* was dead,
How they had well escaped of that stead.
Through the *Ochel* they had gone all that night,
To *Airth* Ferry when that the day was light :
How a true *Scot* through kindnesse of *Wallace*,
Brought them soon over, then kend them to the
Als *Keirly* wist that *Wallace* living were, (place
Near *Dunipace* that he should find them there.
The Parson gart good purveyance for them dight
Into *Tor-wood* they lodged all that night,
While the woman that *Wallace* north had send,
Returned again and told him to an end,
What *Englistmen* in the way she saw dead,
Feil was fallen fey in many sundry stead :
The horse she saw that *Wallace* had bereft,
At the *Gaskhall*, standing as it was left,

Withoutten harm, nor touched of a stone :
Of his men, good tydings got she none.
Therefore he grieved greatly in that tide,
In the Forrest he would no longer byde.
The widow gave him part of silver bright,
Two of her sons that worthy were and wight :
The third he left, because he lacked age,
In wear as then might not win vassalage.
The Parson then got them good horse and gear,
But wo he was, his minde was so in wear,
Thus took he leave without longer abode,
To *Dundaff*-mure the samine night he rode.
Sir *John the Graham*, which Lord was of that land,
An aged Knight, had made none other band :
But purchast peace, in rest he might bide still,
Tribute he payed full sore against his will,
A son he had, both wise, worthy, and wight,
King *Alexander* at *Berwick* made him Knight,
Where showing was of battel to have been,
Betwixt the *Scots*, and the bold *Persie* keen.
This young Sir *John* right noble was in wear,
On a broad sword his father gart him swear,
He should be true to *Wallace* in all thing,
And he to him, while life in them might reign.
Three nights there *Wallace* was out of dread,
Rested him well, so had he meikle need :
On the fourth day he would no longer bide,
Sir *John the Graham* bowned with him to ride :
And he said, Nay, as then it should not be,
A plain part yet I will not take on me.
I have tint men through mine own reklesse deed :
A burnt child als more sore the fire should dread.

Friends

Friends some part I have in *Cliddisdale*,
I will go see what they may me avail.
Sir John answered, I will your counsel do :
When ye think time, send privatly me to,
Then I shall come with my power in haste.
He him betought unto the holy Ghaist,
S. John to brogh they should meet whole & sound.
Out of *Dundaff* he and his four couth found :
In *Bothwel Mure* that night remained he,
With one *Crawford* that lodged him privlie,
Upon the morn to the *Gilbank* he went,
Received he was of many with glad intent :
For his dear *Eme* young *Anchinlek* dwelt there,
Brother he was to the Sheriff of *Aire*.
When old *Sir Rannald* to his death was dight,
Then *Anchinlek* wedded that Lady bright :
And children got, as stories bear record,
Of *Lesmahago*, for he held of that Lord :
But he was slain, that pity was the maire,
With *Pierfies* men into the town of *Aire*.
His son dwelt still, then nineteen years of age,
And brooked whole his fathers heritage :
Tribute he payed for all his lands braid,
To the Lord *Pierfie*, as his brother had made,
I leave *Wallace* with his dear Uncle still,
Of *Englishmen* yet speak something I will.
A messenger soon through the Countrey yeed
To Lord *Pierfie*, and told this fellow deed :
Kinclevin was burnt, broken, and casten down,
The Captain dead of it, and Saint *Johnstoun* :
The *Laran* als in *Short-wood-shawes* shewn :
Into the Land great sorrow hath been seen,

Through

through wight *Wallace* that all this deed hath done
the town he spyed, and that forethought us soon.
Butler is slain with doughty men and dear.

Asper speech the *Pierse* then gan spear,
that word of him? I pray thee graithly tell.

Lord, he said, right thus the case befell:

we know for truth he was left him alone,

and as he fled he slew full many one:

the horse we found that him that gate could bear,
of himself no other word we hear.

Striveling bridge we wot he passed nought,

death in *Forth* he may for us be brought.

And *Pierse* said, Now truly that is sin,

good of hand he is this world within.

And he tane peace, and been our Kings man,

this whole Empire he might have conquest than.

Great harm it is of our Knights that are dead,

we must gar see for others in their stead:

now not yet that *Wallace* lossed be:

our Clerks sayes, He shall gar many die.

the Messenger sayes, All that forsooth hath been,

any handred that cruel was and keen,

since he began, are lossed without remead.

the *Pierse* said, Forsooth he is not dead:

the Crooks of *Forth* he knows wonder well:

is on live that shall our Nation feil.

when he is stressed, then can he swim at will:

great strength he hath, both wit & grace theretill.

the messenger the Lord charged to wend,

and his command in write he with him send:

John Psewart great Sheriff then he made

Saint Johnstoun, and all the Lands brade:

Into *Kinclevin* there dwelt none there again.
There was nought else but broken walls in plain.
Leave I them thus ruling the Lands there,
And speak I will of *Wallace* good welfare :
He sent *Keirly* unto *Rannald* that night,
To *Boyd* and *Blair*, that worthy were and wight;
And *Adam* als, his Cousen good *Wallace*.
To them declared he of this painfull case,
Of his escape out of that company :
Right wonder glad was that good Chevalrie.
Fra time he knew that *Wallace* living was,
Good diligence they made to him to passe:
Master *John Blair* was one of that mess:ge,
A worthy Clerk, both wise, and als right sage :
Learned he was before in *Paris* town,
Amongst Masters in science of good renown.
Wallace and he at home in school had been,
Soon afterwards, as verity was seen,
He was the man that chiefly undertook,
That first compyled to dyte the Latine Book
Of *Wallace* life, right famous of renown.
And *Thomas Gray* Parson of *Libbertoun*,
With him they were, and put in historial,
Oft one or both mickle of his travel.
And therefore hereof them I make mention.
Master *John Blair* to *Wallace* made him bow,
To see his health his comfort was the mose,
As they full oft together were before.
Silver and gold they gave him for to spend,
So did he them freely when God it send.
Of good wel-fare as then he wanted none;
Englisshmen wist he was left him alone :

Where he should be, was none of them couth say,
 Crowned or slain, or else escaped away,
 Therefore of him they took but little head.
 They knew him not, the lesse he was in dread.
 All true *Scots* great favour to him gave,
 What good they had he needed not to crave.
 The peace lasted that Sir *Rannald* had tane,
 Those three moneths it should not be out-gane.
 Whole *Christmas* then *Wallace* remained there.
 In *Lanerk* oft to sport he made repara.
 When that he went to *Kilbank* from the town,
 He found men was of that Nation,
 To *Scotland* they did never grivence more :
 Some sticket they, some throats in sunder shore.
 Heil were found dead, but none wist who it was.
 Whom he handled, he let no further pass.
 There *Heslrig* dwelt, that cursed Knight to waile;
 Sheriff he was of all these Lands haile :
 Of fellon outrage despiteful in his deed,
 Many of him therefore had meikle dread,
 Marvel he thought who durst his people sla.
 Without the town he caus'd great number ga.
 When *Wallace* saw that they were mo then he,
 Then did he nought but salust courteouslie.
 Als his four men bure them so quietly,
 No *Sutheron* could deem them unhonestly.
 In *Lanerk*, a gentle woman there,
 A maiden mylde, as my Book will declare,
 Eighteen years old, and little more of age,
 Als born she was to part of heritage.
 Her father was of worship and renown,
 And *Hew Braidfute* he heght of *Lamingtown*.

As feil were then into the Countrey call'd,
Before-time they Gentlemen were of ald :
But this good man and ah his wife was dead,
The Maiden wist then of none other remead,
But still she dwelt in tribute in the town,
And purchast had King *Edwards* protection.
Servants with her, of friends at her will,
Thus lived she without desire of ill.
A quiet house, as she might hold in wear.
For *Heslrig* had done her miekle dear :
Slain her brother which eldest was and Heir :
All suffered she, and right lowly her bare.
Amiable, so benign, ware, and wise,
Courteous and sweet, fulfilled of all gentrice :
Well ruled of tongue, right hail of countenance :
Of vertue she was worthy to advance :
Humbly her held, and purchast a good name :
Of every wight she kepted her from blame.
True religious folk a great favour her lent.
Upon a day to the Kirk as she went,
Wallace her saw as he his eyes can cast,
The print of love him prunzied at the last,
So asperly through beauty of that bright,
With great unease in presence bide he might :
He knew full well the kindred of her blood,
And how she was in honest use and good.
Whiles would he think to love her over the lave,
And other while he thought on his dislave,
How that his men were brought to confusion,
Through his last love he had in *Saint Iohnston*.
Then would he think to live and let overslide,
But that thought long in minde could not abide.

he told *Keirly* of his new lust and bail,
 then asked he him of his true counsell.
 After, he said, as far as I can feel,
 of likeliness it may be wonder well :
 since so ye love, take her in marriage;
 goodly she is, and als of heritage :
 suppose that ye in loving feel amiss,
 great God forbid it should be so with this.
 To marry thus, I cannot yet attend,
 would of war first see a final end :
 will no more alone to my love gang,
 take heed to me, for dread I suffer wrang.
 To proffer love thus soon I would not prieve,
 right I leave off, in war I think to live.
 What is this love ? nothing but foolishnesse :
 may reave me both wit and steadfastness,
 then said he thus, This will not graithly be,
 mours and wars at once to reign in me.
 Right sooth it is, stood I in blesse of love,
 there deeds were, I should the better prove.
 At well I wor, where great earnest is in thought,
 letteth war that in wile men is wrought.
 Blesse it be, but only till on deed :
 when he that thinkes of love for to speed,
 may do well, hath he fortune and grace ;
 at this stands all into another case.
 great Kingdom with feil foes overset,
 right hard it is any mends for to get
 against them and keep the observance
 which belongs to love, and all her frivole chance.
 sample I have which me forthinketh fair,
 hope in God, it shall be so no mair.

The truth I know of this, and her linage:
I know nought her, therefore I losse a gage.
To *Keirly* he thus argued in this kinde,
But great desire remained in his minde:
For to behold that freely of fassoun,
A while he left, and came not in the town,
On other thing did make his wit to vaik,
Proving that he might of that labour slak.
When *Keirly* saw he suffered pain for thy,
Dear Sir, he said, ye live in sluggary:
Go see your love and ye shall get comfort.
At his counsel he walked for to sport,
Into the Kirk, where she made residence.
She knew him well; but as for Eloquence,
She durst not well in presence to him kyth,
Full fore she dread that *Sutheron* should her myth
For *Heslrig* had a matter new begun,
And her desired in marriage to his son.
With her maiden this *Wallace* she besought:
To dyn with her, and privatly she him brought
Through a garden she had gart work anew,
So *Englishmen* nought of their meeting knew.
He kissed this Maid with gladnesse and pleasance,
Soon her besought right heartly acquaintance.
She answered him with humble words and wise,
Were mine acquaintance worthy for to prise,
Ye shall it have, as God me save in saul,
But *Englishmen* do gar our power fall,
Through violence of them, and their bairnige,
That hath well near destroyed our Linage.
When *Wallace* heard her complaint piteously,
Grieved in heart he was right greatly,

both ye and love him set into a rage,
 he nought for they he sobered in courage.
 Of this matter he told as I said aire,
 so that good love how love constrained him sair.
 He answered him reasonably again,
 and said, I shal to your service be bane,
 with all pleasance in honest causes hail,
 and I trust nought ye would set to assail.
 For your Worship, to do me dishonour,
 and I a Maid, and stand in many flour,
 from *Englishmen* to save my woman-heid,
 and coatt have made to keep me from their feid.
 With my good will I will no Lemman be,
 no man born: therefore I think should ye
 like me not but into goodlinesse:
 chauce ye think I were too low percase,
 or to pretend to be your righteous wife,
 to your service I would use all my life.
 Here I beseech, for your worship in arms,
 charge me not with no ungoodly harms:
 let me defend for worship of your blood.
 When *Wallace* well her true tale understood,
 in a part him thought it was reason,
 her desire: therefore to conclusion,
 thanked her and said, if it might be,
 through Gods will, that our Kingdom be free,
 would you wed with all hearty pleasance,
 at this time I may not take such chance.
 And for this cause no other now I crave:
 man of war may not all pleasance have.
 Other talk, can I tell you no mair,
 my purpose, what band that they made there.

Conclude

Conclude they this, and to the dinner went,
The fore grievance remained in his intent.
Losse of his men, and lusty pain of love :
His leave he took, at that time to remove.

CHAP II. *How Wallace past to Lochmabane
and how they cutted his horse taites, and how he
shave the Blood letter.*

Then to Gilbank he past ere it was night,
Upon the morn with his four men him dight,
To the Cor-head without resting him rade,
Where his nevoy *Thom Haliday* him abade,
And *Edward Little* als, his Cousen dear,
Which was so blyth when he wist him so near,
Thanking great God he sent him safe again,
For many dreamed he in *Strathern* was slain.
Good cheer they made all out those days three.
Then *Wallace* said that he desired to see
Lochmabane town, & *Englishmen* that were there
On the fourth day they bowned them to fare :
Sixteen he was of goodly Chevalry,
In the *Knockwood* he leaved all but three :
Thomas Haliday went with them to the town,
Edward Little, and *Keirly* made them bown,
To an Hostler *Thomas Haliday* led them right,
And gave command their dinner should be dight
To hear a Masse, in good intent they yeed,
Of *Englishmen* they thought there was no dread
One *Clifford* came, was *Emes* son to the Lord,
And three with him, the truth for to record,
To their Innes soon, after *Wallace* was past :
Who ought these horse? in great hathing he askt
The good-wife said, for to have pleased him be
Three Gentlemen are come out of the west.

Who devil them made so gayly for to ride?
In faith with me a wed there must abide.
These lewd *Scots* have learned little good,
Lo all these horse are shent for fault of blood.
Unto great scorn, withouten words more,
The tailed all of these three horse they shore.
The good-wife cryed, and piteously can greet:
So *Wallace* came, and could the Captain meet,
A woman told him, they had his horse shent.
For proper yre he grew in maltalent:
He followed fast, and said, Good freinds, abide,
Service to take for thy craft in this tide:
Marchel thou art without command of me,
Reward again me thinks, I should pay thee:
Since I of late new came out of the west,
In this Country a Barbour of the best:
To cut and shave, and that one wonder good:
Now shalt thou feel how I use to let blood.
With his good sword the Captain hath he tane;
While horse again he marshelled never ane.
Another soon upon the head strake he,
While chafts and cheeks upon the gate can flee:
By that his men the other three had slain;
Their horse they took, and graithed them ful bane,
Out of the town for dinner had they none.
The wife she prayed that made so piteous moan.
Then *Englishmen* fra their Chiftain was dead,
So *Wallace* sought from many fundry stead:
From the Castle came cruel men and keen.
When *Wallace* hath their sudden ssembly seen,
Toward some strength he bowned him to ride.
For then him thought it was not time to bide.

His horse bled fast, that gart him dreading have,
Of his good men he would have had the lave.
To the *Knock-wood* withoutten more they rade,
But into it no sojourning he made:
That wood as then was neither thick nor strang,
His men he got, then lighted he to gang,
Toward an hight, and led their horse a while,
The *Englisshmen* were then within a myle,
On fresh horse riding full hastily,
Seven score as then were in that company.
The *Scots* lap on, when they that power saw,
Toward the South them thought it best to draw,
Then *Wallace* said, It was no wit in wear,
With our power to bide them bargan here.
You are men good, therefore I would that we
Innere more seek, while God send us supplie.
Haliday said, We shal do your couniel:
But sore I dread these hurt horse will fail:
The *Englisshmen* in birnisht armour clear,
By then to them approached wonder near:
Horsed Archers shot, and would not spare,
Of *Wallace* men they wounded two full fair.
In yre he grew when that he saw them bleed,
Himself he turned, and on them soon he yeed:
Sixteen with him that worthy were in weer,
Of the foremost right sharply down they beat,
At that return fifteen in field was slain,
The lave they fled into their power again.
Wallace followed with his good Chevalrie,
Thomas Haliday in wear was full busie:
A bushment saw that cruel was and keen,
Two hundred hail of well graiched *Englisshmen*.

Uncle, he said, our power is too sma,
 From this plain field I counsell you to dra :
 Too few we are against yon fellow stail.
Wallace returned ful soon at his counsel,
 At the *Cor-head* full fain they would have been :
 But *Englishmen* have well their purpose seen,
 In plain battel them followed hardily.
 In danger thus they held them awfully.
Hew of Mort-land on *Wallace* followed fast.
 He had before made many *Scots* agast.
 Holden he was of weir the worthiest man,
 In North *England* was with him living than :
 In his Armour wel forged of fine steel,
 A noble Courser bare him both fast and wel :
Wallace returned beside a buirly Oak,
 And on him set a fellow sikker stroak,
 Both collar bone and shoulder blaid in two,
 Through the mid coast, the good sword gart he go :
 His spear he wan, and als his Courser bright,
 Then left his own, for losed was his might,
 For lack of blood he might no farther gang.
Wallace on horse the *Sutherland* men among,
 His men relieved that doughty were indeed.
 Him to rescue out of that fellow dread,
 Cruel stroaks forsooth there might be seen,
 On either side till blood ran on the green,
 Right perillously the temibly was to see,
 Hardly and hot continued the maillie.
 Hewing rescue of *Scots* and *English* als
 Some carved bone in sunder, and some the hals,
 Some hurt, some hint, some dung into the dead,
 The hardy *Scots* so stirred in that head,

With *Haliday* on foot that boldly abade,
Among the *Sutheron* a full great room they made
Wallace on horse hint him a noble spear,
Out through them rade, as good *Chiftain* in we
Three flew he there ere that his spear was gane,
Thus his good sword in hand then hath he tane
Dang on derfly with straiks sad and sore,
Whom that he hit, grieved the *Scots* no more.
Fra *Sutheron* men by natural reason knew,
How with a stroke a man ay he flew,
Then marvelled they he was so meikle of main,
For their best men in that kinde had he slain.
That his great strength again helped him nought
Nor none other in contrare *Wallace* sought.
Then said they all, Leave he in strength untane,
This whole Kingdom he will win him alane.
They left the field, and to their power fled,
And told their Lord, how evil the foremost sped
Which *Graystock* heght, was new come in the la
Therefore he crowed none durst against him stan
Wonder he thought when as he saw that fight,
Why his good men for so few took the flight.
At that return twenty in field were tint,
And *Moreland* als therefore he would not stint
But followed fast with three hundred but drea
And swore he would be venged on that deed.
The *Scots* wan horse, because their own did fail
In fleeing then choosed the most avail.
Out of the field this wight *Wallace* is gone,
Of his good men he had not lossed one:
Five wounded were, but lightly forth they ro
Wallace a space behinde them ay abode.

and Haliday proved well in many place,
sister son he was to good Wallace.
Varlike they rode, and held their horse on end,
or they trowed well the Sutheron would offend:
With whole power at once upon them set:
at Wallace cast their purpose for to let:
to break their ray, he visit them full fast:
the Englishmen so greatly were agast,
that none of them durst rush out of this stall,
in a ray together held them hail.
The Sutheron saw how that abundantly,
Wallace abode near hand their Chevalry:
Morelands horse they knew him wonder well,
told to their Lord, and told him everilk deal:
Sir, they said, forsooth this same is he,
that with his hands caused so many die.
With his horse grace upon his feet to bide,
doubts not through five thousand for to ride,
we need you cease and follow him no more,
dread that we repent it syn full sore.
blamed them, and said, Men may well see,
wards ye are, that for so few would flee.
their counsel yet leave would he them nought;
great ire he sadly on them sought,
ling a place where he might bargan make:
Wallace was wo upon him for to take,
he so few to bide them on a plain:
Queensbery he would have been full fain:
in himself he took so great travail,
and his men, if that might him avail,
word in hands right manly him to wear,
waiting fast if he might get a spear.

Now here, now there, before them to and fro,
His horse gave over, and might no further go:
Right at the skirt of *Quinsbery* befell,
But upon grace, as mine Author will tell:
Sir *John the Graham* that worthy was and wight,
To the *Cor-head* came on the other night,
Thirty with him of noble men at wage,
The first daughter he had in marriage,
Of *Haliday*, was Nevy to *Wallace*,
Tydings to spier, Sir *John* passed off that place
With men to speak, where they a tryst had set,
Right near the stead where *Scots* and *English* met
And *Kirkpatrick* that cruel was and keen,
In *Eskdale-wood* that half a year had been:
With *Englishmen* he could not well accord,
Of *Torthormald* he Baron was and Lord:
Of kin he was to *Wallace* mother dear,
On *Crawford* side, that meikle had to stier:
Twenty he had of worthy men and wight,
By then *Wallace* approached to their sight.
Sir *John the Graham* when he the counter saw
On them he rade, and stood but little aw.
His good-father he knew right wonder well,
Cast down his spear, and sunzied not a deal.
Kirkpatrick als with worthy men of wear,
Fifty in front at once they down can bear,
Through the thickest of three hundred he ran
On *Sutherland* side full great slaughter they made
Them to rescue that was in fellow throng,
Wallace on foot the great power among:
Good room he got through help of Gods grace
The *Sutherland* fled, and left them in that place

Horses they wan, to stuff the chase good speed,
Wallace and his that doughty were indeed.
Graystock took flight on stern horse and stout,
An hundred held together in a rout :
Wallace on them fall sadly can pursue,
The fleeing well of *Englishmen* he knew,
That ay the best would passe with their Chiftain,
Before him fand he good Sir *John the Graham*,
Ay striking down whom ever he might hy.
Then *Wallace* said, This is but waste folly,
Commons to slay where Chiftains goes away :
Your horse are fresh, therefore do as I say :
Good men ye have are yet in noble state,
To yon great rout, for Gods love hold your gate :
Sunder them soon, we shall come at your hand.
When Sir *John* had this tale well understand,
Of none other, from thenceforth took he heed,
To the foremost he followed well with speed.
Kirkpatrick als considered this counsel,
They charged their men ay follow on the stail :
At his command full soon with them they met :
Sad straiks and sore sadly upon them set.
His Uncle als he knew right wonder well,
Cast down his spear, and founzied not a deal.
Kirkpatrick als with worthy men of wear,
Thirty on front at once down they bear.
Through the thickest Sir *John the Graham* rade,
On *Sutheron* side full great slaughter they made.
Good room he got, through help of Gods grace,
The *Sutheron* fled, and left them in that place.
Horses they wan to stuff the chase good speed,
Wallace and his that doughty were indeed.

Graystock fled fast on stern horse and stout,
An hundred held together in a rout,
Wallace on them sadly could persue,
The fleeing well of *Englishmen* he knew.
Wallace on horse he hint a noble spear,
And followed fast as good Chistain in wear.
Three slew he there ere that his spear was gane,
Then his good sword in his hand hath he tane,
Dang on derfily with straiks sad and sore;
Whom that he hit grieved the *Scots* no more.
Upon the lave fighting full wonder fast,
And many groom they made full sore agast.
The *Englishmen* that busie were in wear,
Assailed sore them from the Mousse to bear.
Right perillous the sembly was to see:
Hardy and heat continued the mellie.
Shewing the rescue of *Scots* and *English* als,
Some carved bones in sunder, some the hals.
Sir Iohn the *Graham* to Graystock fast he sought,
His pensane then it helped him right nought:
Upon the craig a graith straike gave him right,
The burely brand was braid, and birnish bright,
In sunder carved the mailzies of fine steel,
Through brain and bone it rushed ever ilk deal.
Dead with that dint to the grouid down him drat
By that *Wallace* assembled on the lave.
Derfily to death feil frieks there he dight,
Rose never again, whom ever he hit right.
Kilpatrick came, *Thom Haliday*, and their me
Their doughty deeds were noble for to ken.
At the *Knock-head* the bold *Graystock* was slat
And many mo which were of meikle main;

to save their lives, part in the wood they past,
the *Scottishmen* they ran together fast.
When *Wallace* with Sir *Iohn* the *Graham* had met,
right goodly he with humbleness him greet;
ardon he asked of the reprove before,
to the chase, and said he should no more
information make to him that was so good.
Then that Sir *Iohn* well *Wallace* understood,
so away, he said, thereof as now no mair;
he did full right, it was for our welfare:
Wiser in war ye are all out then I:
rather in Arms ye are to me for thy.
Sir *Patrick* then that was his Cousin dear,
he thanked him right on a good manner.
Eight score wer slain ere they wold leave the stead
the fleeing folk they knew of no remead.
Not one was lost of all their Chevalry,
Sir *Iohn* the *Graham* to them came happily.
The day was done, approaching was the night,
Sir *Wallace* then they asked counsel right.
He answered thus, I speak but with your leave,
right loath I were any good men to grieve:
At this I say, in terms short, for me,
would assail, if ye think it may be,
McMabane house which now is left alone,
or well I wot that power in it is none.
Harlawerock als yet *Maxwell* hath in his hand,
and we had these, they might be both a wand
gainst *Sutherland* that now hath our Countrie;
what ye will, this is the best thinks me.
Sir *Iohn* the *Graham* gave first his good consent,
then all the lave right with a whole intent,

To *Lochmabane* right hastily they ride:
When they came there, not half a mile beside,
The night was dark, to counsel are they gone :
Of Moon or Star appearance was there none.
Then *Wallace* said, We think this land at rest :
Thom Haliday, thou knowst the Countrey best,
I hear no noise of feil folks here about,
Therefore I trow we are the lesse in doubt.
Haliday said, I will take one with me,
And ride before, the Countrey for to see.
Watson he called, with me make thee bown,
With them thou wast ay neighbour in this town.
I grant I was with them against my will,
And mine intent was ay to do them ill.
Unto the gate peartly they two forth rade,
The Porter came withoutren longer abade :
At *John Watson* then tydings could he spier.
Open, he bade, the Captain cometh near.
The gate but more unwisely up he drew,
Thom Haliday soon by the craig him threw,
And with a knife he slicked him in that stead,
In a dark hole down dreadlesse cast him dead.
John Watson hatb hint the keyes in his hand,
The power then with *Wallace* was comand :
They entred in, before them found no mo,
Except women, and simple servants two :
In the Kitching long scudlers had they been.
Soon they were sluin. When the Lady had seen
She cry'd for grace, for him that died on tree.
Then *Wallace* said, Madame, your noise let be
To women yet we do but little ill,
And young children, we like not for to spill.

I wou

would have meat, *Haliday*, what sayes thou?
 or fasting folk to dine good time were now.
 great purveyance was ordained them before,
 both bread and Ail, good wine, and other store.
 no meat they bowned, for they had fasted lang.
 good men of arms into the crosse cauld gang:
 at fleeing folk on foot they from them glaid,
 on the *Knock-head*, where great mellie was made;
 as they came, *John Watson* let them in,
 and done to death withouten noise or din.
 no man left there that was of *England* born.
 the Castle well they viewed on the morn:
 for *Johnstoun* sent a man of good degree,
 second daughter forsooth wedded had he,
 of *Haliday's* dear Nevoy to *Wallace*,
 great Captain then they made him of that place.
 they left him there into a good array,
 they ished forth upon the other day.
 Women had leave in *England* for to fare.
 Good *Wallace* & Sir *John* the *Graham* could care
 to the *Corhead*, and lodged there that night:
 upon the morn the Sun was at the hight:
 after dinner they would no longer bide,
 their purpose took in *Crawford-Mure* to ride.
 for *John* the *Graham*, with *Wallace* that was wight,
 thons *Haliday* again returned right
 to the *Corhall*, and there remained but dread.
 to *Sutherland* wist principal who did this deed.
Girpatrick past to *Eskdale* woods wide,
 in safety there he thought he should abide.
 Good *Wallace* and Sir *John* the *Graham* in fear,
 With them fourty men of arms clear:

Through *Crawford* Mure as they then took the
On *Englishmen* their minde remained ay. (way

CHAP. III. How *Wallace* won the Castle

Crawford, and slew the Captain thereof.

FROM *Crawford* *John* the water down they ride
Near hand the night, they lodged upon *Clyde*

Their purpose took into a quiet vail,

Then *Wallace* said, I would we might assail

Crawford Castle with some good jeopardie :

Sir *John* the *Graham*, how say ye best may be ?

This good Knight said, If the men were without

To take the house there is but little doubt.

A Squyer then ruled that Lorchip haile,

Of *Cumberland* born, his name was *Mortindale*

Then *Wallace* said, My self will passe in feir,

And one with me, of harbery for to speir :

Follow on drigh, if that we misther ought.

Edward Little with his Master forth sought,

To an Hostillary, and with a woman met,

She told to them, that *Sutheron* there were set

If ye be *Scots*, I counsel you passe by,

For if they may, ye will get evil harbery.

At drink they are, so have they been right long

Great word there is of *Wallace* them among.

They crow that he hath found his men again :

At *Lochmabane* feil *Englishmen* are slain.

The house is lost that makes them be full wo :

I hope in *God* that they shall soon tyn mo.

Wallace spiered, of *Scotland* if that she be ?

She said, Yea : and thinks yet to see

Sorrow on them, through help of *God*'s grace.

He asked her, Who was into that place ?

No man of fence was left that house within :
 Twenty are here making great noise and din.
 Wallace, she said, if that I might once see
 The worthy Scots in it mought matter be.
 With this woman he would no longer stand.
 Beaken he made, Sir John came at his hand.
 Wallace went in, and said, Benedicite.
 The Captain speired, what bellamy may thou be,
 That comes so grim? some tydings to us tell.
 Thou art a Scot, the devil thy Nation quel.
 Wallace braid out a sword withoutten more,
 Into the breast the brime Captain he bore,
 Throughout the coast, sticked him to the dead;
 Another he hit acward upon the head.
 Whom ever he strake, he bursted bone and lyre,
 Eil of them dead fell flatling in the fire.
 Lasty payment he made them on the door,
 And Edward Little keeped well the door.
 Sir John the Graham full fain would have been in,
 Edward him bade at the Castle begin,
 For of these folk we have but little dread.
 Sir John the Graham fast to the Castle yeed.
 Wallace rudely such routs on them gave,
 That twenty men derfly to death he drave.
 Fifteen he strake, and fifteen hath he slain,
 Edward slew five which was of meikle main.
 To the Castle Wallace had great desire,
 By that Sir John had set the house on fire :
 None was therein that great defence could mie,
 But women fore fast weeping into waie.
 Without the place a bold Bulwark was made,
 Wallace went over withoutten longer bade :

The woman soon he saved from the dead.
 Weak folks he put, and children from that stead
 Of purveyance he found little or none,
 Before that time their victual was all gone :
 Yet in that place they lodged all that night,
 From th' Hostlary brought such good as the
 Upon the morn houses they spoiled fast, (might
 All things that dought, out of that place they call
 Tree-work they burnt, that was within the wane
 And wals brake down that stalwart were of stanes
 Spoild what they might, then would no longer bid
 Unto *Dundaff* the same night they did ride,
 And lodged there with all mirth and pleasance,
 Thanking great God that sent thē so good chance

The end of the Fifth Book.



THE SIXTH BOOK.

CHAP. I.

*Of the Sponsage of Wallace, and how Heselrig slew
 Wallace wife in the Town of Lanerk, and how
 Wallace slew Heselrig for the same cause, &
 put the Englishmen out of Lanerk.*

Then passed were the Octaves of February
 And part of *March* by right digestion
 Appeared then the last moneth of *Ver*,
 The sign of Summer, with his sweet season.
 By that *Wallace* from *Dundaff* made him bowne
 His leave he took, and to *Kilbank* can fare:
 The rumour rose through *Scotland* up and down
 With *Englishmen*, that *Wallace* living were.

Into *April*, when clothed is but ween,
 The able ground through working of Nature,
 And woods have on their worthy weeds green :
 When *Nymphs* in building of her boure,
 With oyle and balm fulfilled of sweet odour :
 Saneittis in trace, as they were wont to gang,
 Walking their course in every casual hour,
 To glad the Hunters with their merry sang.

In this same time to him approached new,
 His lusty pain of which I spake of aile :
 By loves case he thought for to persue
 In *Lanerk*, town and hither can he fare :
 At residence a while remained there,
 In her presence, as I have said before :
 Though *Englishmen* grieved at his repaire,
 Yet he delighted the thing that set him sore.

The fire of Love him ruled at such wise,
 He liked well with that goodly to be :
 Whiles he would think of dangers for to rise,
 And other whiles out of her presence flee :
 To cease of war it were the best for me,
 Thus win I nought but sadness on ilk side,
 Shal never man this cowardnesse in me see :
 To war I will, for chance that may betide.

What is this, Love ? It is but great mischance,
 That me would bring from arms verily :
 I will not change my worship for pleasance,
 In war I think my time to occupy.
 Yet her to love I will not let for thy :
 More I shall desire my worship to reserve,
 From this day forth, then evermore did I.
 I fear of war, whether I live or sterue.

What shall I say, *Wallace* was plainly set,
To love her best in all the world so wide :
Thinking he should of his desire to get,
And so befell by concord, on a tide,
That she was made at his command to bide :
And this began the stinting of this strife.
The band began with graith witnesse beside:
Mine Authour says, she was his wedded wife.

Now live in peace, now live in good concord;
Now live in play, now live in whole pleasure,
For she by chance hath both her love and Lord:
He thanks love that did him so advance,
So evenly held by favour the ballance :
Then he at will may lay her in his arms :
She thanked God of her high happy chance,
For in his time he was the flower of arms.

Fortune him shew her double figured face,
Feil tyse, or then he had been set above,
In prison now, delivered now through grace,
Now at unease, now at unrest, and ruse,
Now well at will, willing his pleasant love,
And thought himself out of adversitie.
Desiring ay his Manhood for to prove,
In Courage set upon the stages hie.

The very truth I cannot graithly tell,
Into this life how long that they had been :
Through natural course of generation fell,
A child was cheved these two lovers between,
Which goodly was a Maiden bright and sheen:
So farther forth became time to her age,
A Squyer shaw that then full well hath seen,
This life lait man got her in marriage.

The other Maid wedded a Squyer wight,
 Which was well known come in of *Balliols* blood,
 And their heirs by lyne succeeded right
 To *Lamington*, and other Lands good :
 Of this matter the right who understood,
 Hereof as now I will no more proceed,
 Of my sentence shortly to conclude,
 Of other thing my purpose is to reed.
 Right goodly men came of this Lady ying :
 Further of them as now I speak no mair,
 That *Wallace* forth into his war can reign :
 He might not cease, great courage so him bear,
 Otheron to slay, for dread he would not spare,
 And they oft sylfe feil causes to him wrought,
 From that time forth which moved him so sair,
 That never in world out of his mind was brought :
 Now leav thy mirth, now leave thy whole pleasance
 Now leave thy blesse, now leave thy childish age :
 Now leave thy youth, now follow thy hard chance :
 Now leave thy lust, now leave thy marriage :
 Now leave thy Love, or thou shalt tyne a gage,
 Which never in earth shall be redeemed again.
 Alon Fortune, and all her fierce outrage,
 To live in war, go live in cruel pain.
 Fy on Fortune, fy on thy frivole wheel :
 Fy on thy trust, for here it hath no lest,
 That so transfigured *Wallace* out of his weel :
 When he trusted for to have lived best,
 Pleasance here to him is but a jest,
 Though thy fers cours that hath none hap to hoer :
 Thou overthrew out of his liking rest,
 From great pleasance, in war, travel and wo.

What

What is Fortune, who draws the date so fast?
 We wit there is both well and wicked chance;
 But this false world with many double cast,
 In it is nought but very variance.

It is nothing to heavenly governance.
 Then pray we all to the Maker above,
 Which hath in hand of Iustice the Ballance,
 That he us grant it of his dear lasting love.

*Hereof as now further I speak no mair,
 But to my purpose shortly will I fare.*

TWelve hundred years, thereto ninty & seven
 From Christ was born the righteous King
 Heaven,

William Wallace into good liking goes,
 In *Lanerk* town among his mortal foes.
 The *Englisshmen* that ever stout have been,
 With *Heslrig* that cruel was and keen:
 And *Robert Thorne* a fellow subtrill Knight,
 Hach found the way by what means best he might
 How that they should make contraire to *Wallace*
 By argument, as he came upon case.
 On from the Kirk that was without the Town
 While their power might be in Arms bown:
 Sir *Iohn the Graham* that worthy was and true,
 To *Lanerk* town good *Wallace* could persue:
 Of his welfare as he full oft hath seen,
 Of men he had in company fifteen:
 And *Wallace* nine, they had no fears mo:
 Upon the morn unto the Masse they go,
 They and their men gratched in goodly green,
 For the season such use full long hath been.

then sadly they had said their devotion,
 he argued them as they went through the Town,
 the strongest man that *Heslrig* then knew,
 and als he had of lightly words anew,
 he salust them as it were but in scorn,
 then gaird, good day bone *Senzour*, & good morn.
 Who scorns thou? quoth *Wallace*, who leared thee?
 Why, Sir, quoth he, came ye not over the sea?
 pardon me then, for I wend you had been
 an Ambassade to bring an uncouth Queen.
Wallace answered: Such pardon as we have
 us to give, thy part thou shalt not crave:
 since ye are *Scots*, yet saluted shall ye be:
 Good even daucht Lord Ballauch Benochadie.
 More *Sutheron* men to them assembled near.
Wallace was loath as then to make a stear.
 One made a tit, and scrip at his long sword.
 Hold still thine hand, quoth he, & speak the word,
 With thy long sword thou makest meikle boast.
 Thereof, quoth he, thy Dame made little coast.
 What cause hast thou to wear that goodly green?
 My most cause is, but for to make thee teen.
 What should a *Scot* do with so fair a knife?
 He said: The Priest that jangled thy wife,
 That woman long hath called him so fair,
 While that his child worthed to be thine heir.
 Me think, quoth he, thou drivest me to scorn:
 Thy Dame was jaiped ere ever thou was born.
 The power then assembled on him about,
 Two hundred men that stalwart were and stout,
 The *Scottish* saw their power was command,
 Sir *Robert Thorn* and *Heslrig* at hand.

Great multitude with weapons birnisht been,
The worthy *Scots* that cruel were and keen,
Amongst the *Sutherland* such dints gave that tide,
While blood on breid burst from wounds wide
Wallace in stout was cruelly fightand,
Of a *Sutherland* he smote off the right hand :
And when the carle of fighting might no mair,
With his left hand in yre held a buckler,
Then from the stump the blood sprang out full fast
In *Wallace* face abundantly can it cast :
Into great part it marred him of his sight :
Sir *John* the *Graham* a stroke hath tane him right
With his good sword upon the *Sutherland* fyre,
Dersly to death drove him into that yre.
The peril was right awful, hard and strong,
The stout endured marvellous and long :
The *Englishmen* yet gathered wonder fast,
The worthy *Scots* the gate left at the last,
When they had slain and wounded many one,
To *Wallace* Innes the gainest way ate gone.
Then passed soon, defended them right well,
He and Sir *John* with swords of tempered steel.
Behind their men, while they the gate had tane,
The woman then which was full will of wane,
The peril saw with fellon noise and din,
Set up the gate, and let them enter in,
Through to a strength they passed off that stead,
Fifty *Sutherland* upon the gate lay dead.
This fair woman with businesse and might,
The *Englishmen* did carry with a slight :
While that *Wallace* into the wood was past,
Then *Carlisle* craigs they pursued full fast.

When *Sutherland* saw that cheaped was *Wallace*,
 again they turned, the woman took on case,
 at her to death, I cannot tell you how :
 of such matters I may not tarry now.
 Where great dole is but redeeming again,
 renewing of it, is but eeking of pain.
 A true woman had served her full lang,
 out of the Town the gainest way can gang,
 so *Wallace* told how all the deed was done :
 the painfull wo sought to his heart full soon :
 Were not for shame he had shot to the ground,
 or bitter bail that in his breast was bound.
 For *John* the *Graham* both wise, gentle and free,
 Great mourning made, that pity was to see :
 And als the lave that were assembled there,
 For poor sorrow with heart weeped full sair.
 When *Wallace* felt their courage was so small,
 He fenized him for to comfort them all.
 Ease men, he said, this is a bootlesse bane,
 For we cannot chevis her life again.
 Ease a word he might bring out for teen,
 The bailfull tears burst braithly from his een :
 Sighing he said : Shall never man me see
 Rest into ease while this deed wroken be.
 The sakeless slaughter of her, both blyth and bright
 That I avow to the Maker of might,
 Of all that Nation I shall never forbear,
 Young nor old that able is to wear.
 Priests nor women I think not for to flay,
 In my default, but if they causing mae.
 For *John*, he said, let all this mourning be,
 And for her sake there shall ten thousand die.
 Where

Where men may weep, their courage is the less,
It staikes the yre of wrong they should redress.
Of their complaints as now I speak no mair.
Of *Auchenleck* in *Kilbank* dwelling there,
When he heard tell of *Wallace* vexation,
To *Cartland* wood with ten men made him bowen
Wallace he found some part within the night,
To *Lanerk* Town in the haste they them dight.
The watch as then of them had little dread :
Parted their men, then diverse wayes yeed.
Sir *John* the *Graham* and his good company,
Unto Sir *Robert Thorn* full fast they hy :
Wallace and his to *Heslrig* soon they past,
In an high house where he was sleeping fast :
Strake at the door with his foot hardily,
While bar and brayes in the floor gart he ly.
The Sheriff cryed, who makes this great deray ?
Wallace, he said, which thou hast sought this day
The womans death, will God, thou shalt deare by
Heslrig thought it was no time to ly.
Out of the house full fain he would have been :
The night was mirk, yet *Wallace* hath him seen :
Fiercely him strake as he came in great yre,
Upon the head bristit through bone and lyre.
The shearing sword glaid to the shoulder bone,
Out over the stair amongst them he is gone.
Good *Auchenleck* trowed not that he was dead
Thrice with a knife he strake him in that stead.
The scry about rose rudely in that street,
Feil of the lave were fulzier under feet.
Young *Heslrig* and wight *Wallace* is met,
A sikker stroake *Wallace* hath on him set,

fly to death over the stair dang him down :
 ny that night he slew in *Lanerk* town.
 ne grieffes lap, and some sticked within,
 eired they were with hideous noise and din?
John the *Graham* had set the house in fire,
 here *Robert Thorn* was burnt up bone and lyre.
 elve score they slew that were of *England* born
 omen they lived and Preists, on the morn,
 pass their way of blis, and goods bare,
 d swore that they again should come no mair.
 hen *Scots* heard these fine tydings of new,
 ut of all parts to *Wallace* fast they drew :
 enisht the Town, which was their heritage.
 us *Wallace* strave against that great barnage.
 he began with stiff and stalwart hand,
 o cheveis again some rooms in *Scotland*.
 he worthy *Scots* that sembled to him there,
 hosd him for Cheif, their Captain and leader.
 ymer *Wallange* a fellow tyrant Knight,
Bothwell dwelt, King *Edwards* man full sight.
Murray was out, though he was righteous Lord
 f all that Land, as true men will record :
 to *Arane* he was dwelling that tide,
 nd other men in this Land durst not bide.
 ut this false Knight in *Bothwel* winning was.
 man he gart soon to King *Edward* pass,
 nd told him whole of *Wallace* ordinance,
 ow he had put his people to mischance,
 nd plainly was rising again to reign :
 reived thereat right greatly was the King.
 hrough all *England* he gart his doers cry,
 ower to get, and said he would plainly

In *Scotland* passe, that Realm to statute new :
Feil men of war to him right fast they drew.
The Queen felt well how that his purpose was :
To him she went, on knees then can she passe.
He would desist, and not to *Scotland* gang,
Ye should have dread to work a fellow wrang :
Christned they are, yon is their heritage ;
To reave their Crown, it is a great outrage.
For her counsel at home he would not bide,
His Lords him feit in *Scotland* for to ride.
The Scots man that dwelt with King *Edward*,
When he heard tell that *Wallace* took such part,
He stole from them as privily as he may,
In *Scotland* then he came upon a day,
Seeking *Wallace* he made him ready bown.
This Scot was born in *Kyle* at *Richartown*,
All *England* coast he knew it wonder well,
From *Hull* about to *Bristow* every deal :
From *Carlile* through *Sandwich* that royal stead
From *Dover* over unto *Saint Bayes* head.
In *Picardie* and *Flanders* both had been,
All *Normandie* and *France* hath he seen :
A Purlevant to King *Edward* in wear :
But he could never gar him arms bear.
Of great stature, and some part gray was he,
The *Englishmen* called him but *Grymsbie*.
To *Wallace* came, and into *Kyle* him fand,
He told him whole the tydings of *England*.
They turned his name from time they him knew,
And called him *Jop*, of engine he was true.
In all his time good service in him fand,
Gave him to bear the Arms of *Scotland*.

ok Chap. I. Of Sir William Wallace. 117
Wallace again in *Cliddisdale* soon he rade,
and his power sembled withoutten bade.
e gart command, who would his peace take,
free remit he should gar to him make,
for all kind deed that they had done beforne.
e *Persies* peace, and Sir *Rannalds* was worn.
il to him drew that boldly durst abide,
Wallace kin of many diverse side.
Rannald then sent him his power hail,
himself durst not be known into battel
ainst *Sutheron* : for he had made a band,
ng time before, to hold of them his land.
dam Wallace past out of *Richartown*,
and Robert Boyd, with good men of renown.
Cunninghame and Kyle came men of vail,
Lanerk sought on horse a thousand hail.
ohn the Graham. and his good Chevalry,
ohn of Tinto with men that he might hy :
ood Auchenleck that Wallace Uncle was ,
any true Scots with their Chiftain could passe:
three thousand whole of likely men of wear,
and feil on foot which wanted horse and gear.
e time by this was coming upon hand,
e awfull host with Edward of England.

The Battel of Bigger.

NO Bigger came with sixty thousand men,
In war weeds that cruel was to ken,
they planted there feil tents and pavilions,
here Clarions blew with many mighty sounds.
enistht that place with victual and wine :
Carts brought their purveyance full fine.

This

This awful King gart two *Heraulds* be brought
Gave them command in all the haste they mought
To charge *Wallace* that he should come him till
Without promise, and put him in his will :
Because I wot he is a Gentleman :
Come in my grace, and I shall save him than
As for his life, I will upon me take :
And after this, if he will service make,
He shal have wage that may him well suffice,
That Rebald weens, for he hath done suppress
To my people, oft upon adventure,
Against me that he may long endure.
To this profer gain standing if he be,
Here I vow, he shal be hanged hie.
The young Squyer was brother to *Fehew*,
Thought he would go disguised to pursue,
Wallace to see that took so high a part :
Born sisters son he was to King *Edward*.
A coat of Arms he took on him but bade,
With the *Herauld* full privily forth rade,
To *Tinto* hill withoutten residence,
Where *Wallace* lay with his folk at defence :
A likely Host, as of so few they fand.
To him they sought, and would no longer stand
If ye be he that ruleth all this thing,
Credence we have brought from our worthy King
Then *Wallace* caus'd three Knights unto him
Then read the writ in presence of them all.
To them he said : Answer ye shall not crave,
By word or writ, which likes you best to have,
In writ, they said, it were the likeliest :
Then *Wallace* thus began to dyte in haste.

Thou reaver king thou chargest me through case
 That I should come, and put me in thy grace:
 If I gain stand, thou heighest to hang me,
 I vow to God, and ever I may take thee,
 Thou shalt be hanged an example to give,
 To King of rief, as long as I may live.
 Thou proffers me, of thy wages to have,
 I thee desie, power and all the lave.
 That helps thee here of thy stout Nation,
 Will God thou shalt be put from this Region.
 Or die therefore, contrare though thou hadst sworn
 Thou shalt us see before nine hours to morn,
 Battel to give, manger of all thy kin,
 For falslie thou seekest our Realm within.

This writ he gave to the Herauld but mair,
 A good reward he gart deliver him there.
 But Iop knew well the Squyer young Fehew,
 And told Wallace, for he was very true.
 He them commanded, that they should him take,
 Himself began sore accusing to make.
 Squyer, he said, since thou hast feigned arms,
 Do thee so shal fall some part of these harms,
 Example to give thy stout Nation.
 Upon the hill he gart then set him down,
 Strike off his head ere he would further go.
 To the Herauld said then withoutten ho:
 Because to arms thou art false and mensworn,
 Through thy cheek thy tongue shall be out shorn,
 When that was done then to the third said he,
 Arms to judge thou shalt never graithly see:
 He gart a smith with a turkes right there,
 Pull out his eyes, then gave him leave to fare.

To your false King, thy fellow shall thee lead,
With this answer, curse him his Nevoys head.
Thus sore I dread the King and all his boast,
His dumb fellow led him into the Host.

When King *Edward* his Heraulds thus had seen,
In proper ire he grew near wood for teen,
That he wist not in what wise him to wrake,
For sorrow almost, one word he could not speake.
A long while he stood writhing in a rage,
On loud he said, this is a fell outrage.

This deed to *Scots* full sore it shal be bought,
So despitefull in world was never wrought.
From this Region I think not for to gang,
Till time that I shal see this Rebel hang.
I let him thus in syte and sorrow dwell,
Of the good *Scots* shortly I will you tell.

Forth from his men then *Wallace* raiked right,
To him he called Sir *John Tinto* the Knight,
And let him wot, to visie he would go
The *English* Host, and bade him tell no mo,
Whatever they spiered, till that he come again.
Wallace disguised, thus bowned he over plain,
Betwixt *Culter* and *Bigger* as he past,
He was ware where a work-man came fast
Driving a Mare, and Pitchers for to sell:
Good friend, he said, in truth wilt thou me tell
With this chauffray where passest thou truly?
To any place, who liketh for to buy:
It is my craft, and I would sell them fain.
I will them buy, so God me help from pain.
What price, let hear, I will have them ilk ane?
But half a mark, for such price have I tane.

wenty shillings, *Wallace* said, thou shalt have :
 will have mair, pitchers, and all the lave :
 thy gown and hose, in haste put thou off syne,
 and make a change, for I shall give thee mine :
 and thine old hood, because it is threed-bare.
 The man weend well he had scorned him there,
 thou tarrie nought, it is sooth that I say.
 The man cast off his feeble weed of gray,
 and *Wallace* his, then payed silver in hand,
 As on, he said, thou art a bad merchand.
 The gown and hose in clay that clagged was,
 The hood heckled, and then made him to pass.
 The whip he took, and forth the mare can call,
 For the brae the upmost pot gart fall,
 Laid on the ground : the men leugh at his fair,
 But thou beware thou tines of thy chauffair.
 The Sun by that was passed out of sight,
 The day was gone, and comming was the night,
 Amongst the *Sutheron* full busily he past,
 On either side his eyes he can well cast,
 As Lords lay, and had their lodging made,
 In a pavilion where that the Leopards bade,
 Lying full fast where his avail might be.
 He could well wink, and look up with one eye :
 He scorned him, some glyd carle cald him there,
 Heeved they were of their *Heraulds* misfare,
 He asked of him, how he sold of the best ?
 For four pennies, he said, while they may last,
 He brake a part, some pricked at his eye.
Wallace slaid out privatly, and let them be :
 To the host again he passed right,
 Men by then had tane *Tinto* the Knight :

Sir *John the Graham* gart bid him wonder fast,
For he wist well he was with *Wallace* last.
Some bade burn him, some hang him in a cord
They swore that he deceived had their Lord.
Wallace by this was entred them among,
To him he yeed, and would not tarry long:
Then he gart loose him out of these bands so new
And said he was both sober, wise, and true.
To supper soon bowned but more abade,
He told to them what Market he had made,
And how that he the *Sutheron* saw full well.
Sir *John the Graham* displeased was some deal,
And said to him: Not Chistain-like it was,
Through wilfulnesse in such peril to pass.
Wallace answered: Ere we win *Scotland* free,
Both ye and I in perill more must be,
And many other, the which full worthy is.
Now of one thing we do some part in miss,
A little sleep I would fain that we had,
With yon men then look how we may us glad.
The worthy *Scots* took good rest while near d
Then rose they up, t'array soon ordain'd they.
The hill is left, and to a plain are gane,
Wallace himself the vanguard first hath tane:
With him was *Boyd* and *Anchinleck* but dread,
With a thousand of worthy men in weed:
As many then in the middle-ward put he,
Sir *John the Graham* he gart their leader be,
With him young *Adam* the Lord of *Richartow*
Which doughty was, and als of great renown.
The third thousand in the Rere-ward he dighe
To *Walter* gave of *Newbigging* the Knight.

With him *Tinto* that doughty was indeed,
 And *David*, son to Sir *Walter*, to lead :
 Behind them near the foot-men gart he be,
 And bade them bide while they their time might
 Ye want weapons and harnesse in this tide, (see ;
 The first counter ye may not them abide.

Wallace caus'd soon the Chifftain to him call,
 His charge he gave, for chance that may befall,
 To take no heed to gear, nor yet pillage,
 For they will flee as wood men in a rage.

Via first the men, the goods then ye may have,
 And take no rent of covetise to crave :
 Through covetise men loose both goods and life :
 If you command forbear such in our strife.

Look ye save none, Lord, Captain, nor yet Knight,
 For worship work and for our Elders right.
 God bless us all, that we in our voyage,
 Put this stout folk out of our heritage.

Then they inclined all wit ha good will,
 His plain command they heght it to fulfill.
 On the great Host the parties can forth draw,
 Coming to them out of the South. they saw
 Three hundred men into their Armour clear,
 The gainest way to them approached near.

Wallace said soon, These are no *Englishmen*,
 For by this Host the gates full well they ken.

Whom *Haliday* those men he guided right,
 From *Annandale* he had led them that night.

His two good -sons *Johnstoun* and *Rutherford*.

Wallace was blyth when that he heard that word
 It was the lave of that good Chevalry.

Jordan came there into their company,

And *Kirkpatrick* before in *Eskdale* was,
A wing they were in *Wallace* host to pass.
The *English* watch that night had been on steir,
Drew to their horse, right as the day can peir.
Wallace knew well (for he before had seen)
The Kings pavilion, where it had busked been:
Then with rich horse the *Scots* upon them rade,
At the first counter so great a basing made,
That all the host astonisht at that sight,
Full many one derlie to death they dight.
Feil of them then were out of their array,
The more awfull and hasty was the fray.
The noise was hudge throug straits that they dang
The rumour rose so rudely them among,
That all the host was then in possit to flee.
The wise Lords, fra they the peril see:
The fellon fray als raised was about,
And how their King stood in so meikle doubt:
To his pavilion full many thousand sought,
Him to rescue by any way they mought.
The Earl of *Kent* that night waking had been,
With five thousand of men in Armour keen:
About the King full suddenly they gang,
And trust him well the assaillie was right strang.
All *Wallace* folk in use of war was good,
Into the flour soon lighted where they stood:
Whomsoever they hit, no harness might them stie
Fra they on foot assembled with swords dint.
Of man-hood they in hearts ful cruel was,
They thought to win, or never hence to pass.
Feil *Englishmen* before the King they slew;
Sir *John the Graham* came with his power new;

Among

Amongst the Host, with the middle-ward herade,
Great martyrdom on *Sutheron* men they made :
The rere-ward then set on so hardily,
With *Newbigging* and all their Chevalry.
Pavilion-ropes they cutted all in sunder,
Born to the ground, and many smoored under.
The foot-men came, of which I spake of air,
On frayed folks with strokes sad and fair :
Though they before wanted both horse and gear,
Enough they got, what they would weal to wear.
The *Scots* power then altogether were,
The Kings pavilion brimly down they beare,
The Earl of *Kent* with a good axe in hand,
Into the stour full stoutly he could stand
Before the King, making a great debate :
Who best did then, he had the highest state.
The fellaun stour so stalwart was and strong,
Thereto continued marveilous and long.
Wallace himself full sadly could persue,
And at a stroke the chief Captain he slew.
The *Sutheron* folk fled fast, and durst not bide,
Horsed their King, and off the field can ride.
Against his will, he was full loath to flee,
Yet in that time he had no will to die.
Of his best men three thousand there were dead,
Ere he could find to flee, and leave that stead.
Twenty thousand fled with him in a tail.
The *Scots* got horse, and followed the Battel :
Through *Culter* hope, before they wan the hight,
Feil *Sutheron* folk were marred in the night,
Slain by the gate, as their King fled away,
But fair and bright, and right clear was the day,

The Sun risen, shining over hill and dale,
Then *Wallace* cast what was his best avail.
The fleeing folk that off the field first past,
Unto the King again assembled fast :
From either side so many assembled there ;
Then *Wallace* would let follow them no mair :
Before he rade, gart his folk turn again :
Of *Englishmen* seven thousand there was slain :
Then *Wallace* Host again to *Bigger* rade,
Where *Englishmen* great purveyance had made :
The Jewaury as they were hither led,
Pavillions and all they left when as they fled.
The *Scots* got gold, good gear, and other wage,
Relieved they were that parted that pillage.
To meat they went with great mirth & pleasance,
They spared not King *Edwards* purveyance.
With solace then a little sleep they took,
A privat watch he gart amongst them look :
Two Cooks there fell, their lives then for to save,
With dead crosses, which lay unput in grave :
When they saw well the *Scots-men* were at rest,
Out of the field to steal they thought it best.
Full low they crept till they were out of sight,
After the Host then ran in all their might.
When that the *Scots* had slept but a while,
Then rose they up, for *Wallace* dreaded guile :
He said to them : The *Sutheron* may pursue
Again to us, for they are folk anew :
Where *Englishmen* provision make in wear,
It is full hard to do them meikle dear.
On this plain field we will not them abide,
To some good place my purpose is to ride.

the purveyance that left was in that stead,
 Roppis Bog he gart servants it lead,
 with ordinance that Sutherland brought on there.
 with his Host to David Shaw can fare,
 there they remained a great part of the day.
 of Englishmen yet something will I say :
 King Edward through Culter hope is sought,
 then he perceived the Scots followed nought,
 Johns Grave he gart his Host bide still :
 all fleeing folks assembled soon him till.
 When they were met, the King near waxed mad,
 for his dear kin that he there losed had.
 two Emes into the field were slain.
 his second son that meikle was of main.
 his brother Hew was killed there full cold.
 the Earle of Kent that cruel was and bold,
 with great worship took dead before the King :
 for him he mourned so long as he might reign.
 at this ssembly as they in sorrow stand,
 the two cooks soon came in at his hand,
 and told to him how they escaped were,
 the Scots all as swine lyes drunken there,
 Of your wight wine ye gart us thither lead,
 full well ye may be venged of their deed,
 Upon their lives, is sooth that we you tell,
 Return again, ye shall find them your sell.
 He blamed them, and said : No wit it was,
 That he again for such a tale should pass.
 Their Chiftain is right marveilous in wear,
 from such peril he can them well forbear :
 For to seek more as now I will not ride,
 Our meat is lost, therefore we may not bide.

The hardy Duke of *Longcastle* and Lord,
Soveraign, he said, to our counsel concord :
If this be true, we may the more avail,
We may them win, and make but light travel,
Were yon folk dead that now against us stand,
Then need we not for meat to leave the land.
The King answered ? I will not ride again,
As at this time, my purpose is in plain.
The Duke said : Sir, if ye determined be,
To move you more effeirs not unto me :
Command your power again with me to wend,
And I of this shall see the final end.
Ten thousand whole he charged for to ride.
Here is the strength, all night I shall you bide.
We may get meat for bestial in this land.
Good drink as now we may not bring in hand.
Of *Westmurland* the Lord had met him there,
On with the Duke he graithed him to fare :
At the first stroke with them he had not been,
With him he led a thousand well beseen :
And *Picard* Lord was with a thousand bown,
Of King *Edward* he kepted *Calice* town.
These twelve thousand into the town can fare:
The two Captains soon met them at *Bigger*,
With the whole stuff of *Roxburgh* and *Berwicke*
Sir *Ralph Gray* saw that they were *Sutherland* like,
Out of the South approached to their sight.
He knew full well with him it was not right.
Aymer Wallange with his power came als,
King *Edwards* man, a tyrant Knight and false.
When they were met, they found not else there,
But dead corpes, and they were spoiled bare.

Then

When marvelled they where the *Scots* should be,
 If them about, appearance they could not see;
 At spyes them told, that came with Sir *Aymar*,
David Shaw they saw them make repare,
 When feil *Sutheron* soon passed to that place:
 The watch was ware, and told it to *Wallace*.
 He warned the host out of the town to ryde,
 In *Ropis Bog* he purposed to byde.
 A little shaw upon the one side was,
 That men on foot out of the Bog might pass.
 The horse they left into that little hold,
 On foot they thought the Moss that they should
 The *English* host had well their passage seen. (hold
 And followed fast with cruel men and keen.
 They trow'd that Bog might make them little avail
 Crown over with rispe, and all the swaird was hail:
 On them to ride, they ordained with great yre,
 Of the foremost a thousand in the myre,
 Of horse with men are plunged in the deep.
 The *Scots* of their coming took good keep:
 Upon them set with straiks sad and fair,
 Need none away of all that entred there.
 Eight men on foot upon them derfly dang,
 Feil under horse was smooored in that thrang;
 Stamped in Moss, and with rude horse overgane;
 The worthy *Scots* the dry land then have tane,
 Upon the lave fighting full wonder fast,
 And many groom they made full sore agast.
 The *Englishmen* that busie were in wear,
 Assayled sore them from the Moss to bear,
 On either side: but then it was no boot,
 In strength they held right awfully on foot;

To men and horse gave many grievous wound.
Feil to the death they sticked in that stound.
The *Picard* Lord assayled sharply there,
Upon the *Graham*, with straiks sad and sare :
Sir *Iohn* the *Graham* with a stiff sword of steel,
His bright birnis he peirced every deal,
Through all the stuff, and sticked him in that stead
Thus of his dint the bold *Picard* was dead.
The *English* Host took plain part for to flee,
In their returning the *Scots* gart many die.
Wallace would fain at the *Wallange* have been,
Of *Westmoreland* the Lord was them between.
Wallace on him he set an awfull dint,
Through basnet and stuff, that no steel might out
Derfly to death he left him in that place, (sting
So that false Knight escaped through this case.
Good *Robert Boyde* hath with a Captain met,
Of *Barwick* then, a sad straike on him set,
Overthort the craig, and carved the pesane,
Through all his weed in sunder strake the bane.
Eail horse-men fled fast, and durst not abyde,
Rebuted evil, unto the King they ryde.
The Duke him told of all his journey hail,
His heart for yre boldned in bitter bail,
Highly he thought he should never *London* see,
On *Wallace* deed, while he revenged be,
Or lose his men again, as he did aie :
Thus south he sought with gear sorrow and care
Then at the Kirk a little tarry made,
Then through the land over *Sulway* fast they rade
The *Scots* Host a night remained still;
Upon the morn they spoiled with good will.

The dead corps carried to *Braidwood* was with care
 a counsell three dayes they sojourned there :
 At the *Forrest Kirk* a meeting ordained he :
 They choosed *Wallace*, *Scots* Warden for to be,
 Trusting he should their painful sorrow cease,
 He received all that would come in his peace.
 At *William* came that Lord of *Dowglas* was,
 Forlook *Edward*, at *Wallace* peace can ask :
 That thirlage he would no longer be.
 Tribute before to *England* payed he.
 In contrair *Scots* with them he never rade,
 Far better chear *Wallace* therefore him made.
 Thus treated he and cherist wonder fair,
 True *Scottishmen* that fewty made him there,
 And gave full greatly feil goods that he wan,
 He spared it nought to no good *Scottishman*.
 Who would rebell, and go contrair the right,
 He punisht sore, were he *Squyer* or *Knight*.
 Thus marveilously good *Wallace* took in hand.
 Likely he was, right fair, and well farrand,
 Manly and stout, and therewith liberal,
 Pleasant and wise, in all good general.
 To slay forsooth *Sutherland* he spared nought.
 To *Scottishmen* full great profit he wrought,
 Into the South forsooth then passed he,
 As him best thought he ruled that Countrie.
 Sheriffs he made that cruel was and keen.
 And Captains of true wise *Scots-men*.
 From *Garnylispath* the land obeyed him hail,
 To *Urwater* both strength, forrest and dail.
 Against him in *Galloway* house was none,
 Except *Wigtown* bigged of lime and stone.

That Captain heard the ruling of *Wallace*.
Away by sea he stole out of that place :
Leaved all waste, and could to *England* wend :
But *Wallace* soon a keeper to it lend,
A good Squyer, and to name he was call'd
Adam Gordoun, as the story me tald.

A Strength there was at the water of *Cree*,
Within a rock right stalwart wrought of tre
A gate before, no man might to it win,
But the consent of them that dwelt therein.
On the back-side a rock and water was,
A strait entry forsooth there was to pass :
To vissy it, *Wallace* himself soon went :
Fra he it saw, he cast in his intent
To win the hold : he hath chosen a gate,
That they within should make little debate.
His power whole he gart bide out of sight,
But three with him, while time that it was night.
Then took two when that the night was dim,
Steven of *Ireland* and *Keirly* that could climb
Up soon they went against that rock so strong,
Thus entred they the *Sutherland* men among,
The watch before took no heed to that side,
These three in feir soon to the Porter glyde :
Good *Wallace* then strake the Porter himsell,
Dead over the rock into the dike he fell,
Let down the bridge and blew the horn on hight,
The bushment brake, and came in all their might :
At their own will soon entred in that place :
To *Englismen* they did full little grace.
Sixty they slew, in that place was no mo,
Exc an old Priest, and simple women two.

great purveyance was in that Rock to spend,
 Wallace staid still while it was at an end. (all,
 raked down the strength, both bridge & bulwark
 but over the Rock they gart the timber fall :
 under the gate, and would no longer bide.
 Carrick then they bowned them to ride :
 asked them not, but soberly can fare,
 to Turnbury : that Captain was at Aire :
 With Lord Pierse to take his counsel haile,
 Wallace purpoled that place for to assaile :
 a woman told when the Captain was gone,
 good men of fence into that stead was none :
 they filled the dyke with earth and timber haile,
 then fired the house, no succour might availe :
 A Priest there was, and gentle women therein,
 Which in their manner made hideous noise & din.
 Mercy they cryed, for him that died on tree,
 Wallace gart slak the fire, and let them be.
 to make defence, no mo was leaved there,
 he them commanded out of the land to fare :
 spoiled the place, and spilt all that they mought,
 upon the morn to Cumnoke soon they fought.
 to Lanerk then, and set a time of aire,
 who doers fell he gart be punisht there.
 to the good true men he gave a noble wage,
 his brothers sons put to their heritage.
 to the black Craig of Cumnoke past again,
 his household set with men of meikle main.
 three moneths there he dwelt into good rest,
 the subtil Sutheron found well it was the best,
 crews to take, for to eschew a chance,
 to further this, they sent for Knight Wallace :

Bothwel yet that traytor keeped still,
And Aire all whole was at Lord Pierfies will.
Through great supply of the Captain of Aire,
The Bishop Beik in Glasgow he dwelt there.
Earl of Stanfurd was Chancelour of England,
With Sir Aymar this traitor took on hand,
To procure Peace by any manner of case :
A safe conduct they purchast of Wallace :
In Ruglan Kirk the cryst there have they set,
And promise made to meet Wallace but let.
The day of this approached wonder fast,
The great Chancelour and Aymar thither past,
Then Wallace came, and his men well beseen,
With him fifty, arrayed all in green ;
Ilk one of them a bow and arrows bear,
With long swords, the which full sharply shear.
Within the Kirk so soon they entred had,
Unto his prayer he past but more abade :
Then up he rose, and to his tryst he went,
And his good men full cruel of intent.
In yre he grew, that traytor when he saw,
The Englishmen of his face stood great aw :
Wit ruled him that he did none outrage.
The Earle beheld fast to his high courage :
Forthought some part that he came to that place
Greatly abased for the volt of his face.
Sir Aymar said : This speech ye must begin,
He will not bow to no Prince of your kin.
All ordered ye are I trust you may speak well,
For all England he will not break a deal,
His safe conduct where he makes a band :
The Chancelor then proffered him his hand :

Wallace

Wallace stood still, and could no hands take,
 Kindship to them no likeliness would make.

Aymar said: *Wallace*, ye understand,
 This is a Lord, and Chancellor of *England*:
 To salute him ye may by proper skill.

With short advise he made answer him till:
 Each saluting I use to *Englishmen*,

So shall they have, where ever I may them ken.
 At my power, that make I God a vow,

Not of conduct if that I had him now;

Not for my life, and all my land so brade,

Will not break the promise that is made.

I had rather at mine own will have thee,

Without conduct, that I might wroken be

Of thy false deed thou doest in this Region,

Than of pure gold a King with his ransom.

Not for my band, I will as now let be.

Chancellor, say forth what ye desire of me.

The Chancellor said, The most part of this thing,

To procure peace, I am sent from the King,

With the great Seal, and voice of his Parliament:

What I binde here, our barnage shall consent.

Wallace answered: Over little mends we have,

Then of our right ye occupy the lave:

Quite-clame our land, and we shall not deny.

The Chancellor said, Of no such charge have I.

We will give gold, ere our purpose should fail.

Then *Wallace* said, In waste is that travel:

We ask no gold by favour of your kin,

In war of you we take what we may win.

Based he was to make answer again.

Wallace said, Sir, we jangle all in vain:

My counsel gives, I will no fable make,
 As for a final peace now to take.
 Not for my self, that I bind to your seal,
 I cannot trow that ever you will be leal.
 But poor folk that greatly have been supprised,
 I will take peace, while further ye be advised.
 Then bound they thus, there should be no debate
 Castles and Towns should stand in their ilk state,
 From that day forth, while a year was at end :
 Sealed this Peace, and took their leave to wend,
 Wallace from them passed into the West,
 Made plain repace where that him liked best.
 Yet sore he dread that they should him deceive;
 The Indentour to Sir Rannald he gave,
 His dear Uncle, where it might kept be.
 In Cumnoke then to his dwelling went he.

The end of the sixth Book.



THE SEVENTH BOOK.

CHAP. I.

*How Wallace burnt the Barns of Aire, and
 Bishop Beik out of Glasgow, & slew Lord Pe...*

IN Februar befell the lamine case,
 That *Englishmen* took trews with *Wallace* :
 This passeth over till *March* away was sought
 The *Englishmen* cast all the wayes they mought,
 With subtil and wicked conclusion,
 The worthy *Scots* to put to confusion.
 Into *April* the King of *England* came
 In *Cumberland*, to *Pumfret* from his hame :

to *Carlisle* to a counsel he yeed,
 Whereof the *Scots* might have full meikle dread.
 Many Captains that were of *England* born,
 thither they past, sembled their King beforne.
 To *Scots*-man to counsel was there call'd,
 But Sir *Aymer* that traytor was of ald : (hand;
 At him they spiered : How they should take in
 the righteous blood to stroy out of *Scotland* ?
 Sir *Aymer* said : Their Chiftain can well do,
 Right wise in war, and hath great power too :
 And now this trewes gives them such hardement,
 That to your faith they will not all consent :
 That would ye do right, as I can you lear,
 This Peace to them it should be sold full dear.
 Then deemed he the fierce *Sutherland* among,
 Now they best might the *Scots* Barrons hang.
 Four great Barns at that time stood in *Aire*,
 Wrought for the King, when his bigging was there
 Laid about that no man enter might,
 At one at once, nor have of other sight :
 Justice made which was of meikle main,
 Here ordained they these Lords should be slain :
 The Lord *Piercie* of this matter they laid,
 With sad advise again to them he said :
 These men with me have keeped truth so lang,
 Heedfully I may not see them hang :
 I am their foe, and warn will I them nought :
 I be quite, I care not what be wrought.
 From thence I will, and toward *Glasgow* draw,
 With our Bishop to hear of his new law.
 Then choosed they a Justice fierce and fell,
 Which *Arnulfe* heght, as mine Author will tell,

Of *South-Hampton* he heght both heir and Lord
He undertook to pine them with a cord.

Another Heir in *Glasgow* ordained they,
For *Cliddisdale* men to stand the self-same day.

Then charged them in all wayes earnestly.

By no kind mean *Wallace* should scape them by :

For wel they wist, and these men were overthrow

They might at will brook *Scotland* as their own.

This band they closed under theit seals full fast,

They fought over mure again King *Edward* past,

The new Iustice received was in *Aire*.

The Lord *Perse* can unto *Glasgow* fare.

This Heir was set in Iune the eighteen day,

And plainly cryed no free men were away.

The *Scots* marvelled, and peace cane in the Land

Why *Englishmen* such mastery took in hand.

Sir *Rannald* set a day before this Heir,

At *Monktown* Kirk, his friends to meet him there

William Wallace unto the tryst can pass,

For he as then Warden of *Scotland* was.

Thus Master *John* a worthy Clerk was there,

His kin he charged to bide from that Heir.

Right well he wist fra *Perse* left that Land,

Great peril was to *Scots* appearand.

Wallace from them into the Kirk he yeed,

Pater noster he said, and als a Creed,

Then to the Grece leaned him soberly,

Upon a sleep he fell full suddenly.

Cleland followed, and saw him fall on sleep,

He made no noyse, but wisely couth him keep:

In that slumber coming he thought he saw

A stalwart man, that toward him couth draw.

by the hand he hint him hastilie,
 n, he said, in voyage charged to thee,
 word him gave of barely burnisht steel,
 odson, he said, this sword thou shalt brook well.
 Topasion he thought the plummat was,
 h hilt and all, glittering as the glass.
 ar son, he said, we tarry here too long,
 ou shalt go see where wrought is meikle wrong
 en he him led to a mountain on hight,
 e world he thought he might see at one sight :
 left him there, and then from him he went,
 ereof Wallace studied in his intent,
 see him there he had full great desire,
 erewith he saw begin a fellon fire,
 ich braithly burnt broadly out throgh the Land
 tland all over, from Ross to Sulway land.
 ens on to him descended there a Queen,
 minate, bright, shining full bright and sheen :
 er presence appeared so meikle light,
 at all the fire she put out of his sight :
 ve him a wand of colour red and green,
 th a saphir sayned his face and een :
 lcome, she said, I choose thee to my love :
 ou art granted, by the great God above,
 help people that suffer meikle wrong :
 th thee as now I may not tarry long,
 ou shalt return to thine own Host again,
 y dearest kin are here in meikle pain,
 s right Region thou must redeem it all,
 y last reward on earth shall be but smal.
 not therefore, take redress of this miss,
 thy reward thou shalt have heavens bliss.

Of her right hand she betought him a book,
Humbly thus her leave then she took ;
Unto the clouds ascended out of sight.

Wallace took up the book in all his might :
In three parts the book well written was,
The first letters were grosse letters of brass,
The second gold, the third fine silver sheen ;
Wallace marvelled what this writing should mean

To read the book he busied him so fast,
His sp'rit again to weakening mind it past :
And up he rose, then suddenly forth went,
This Clerk he found, and told him his intent
Of his vision, as I have said before,
Compleatly forth, what needs words more ?

Dear son. he said, my wit unable is
To ratifie such, for dread I say amiss :
Yet will I deem, though my cunning be small ;

God grant that no charge after my words fall.
That stalwart man gave thee that sword in hand
Fergus it was, first winner of *Scotland* :

That mountain is where he had thee on height,
Knowledg to have of wrong which thou must right
That fire shall be feil tydings ere ye part,
Which will be told in many sundry airt.

I cannot wot what *Queen* that that will be,
But it be *Fortune*, a *Lady* whiles right free.

The pretty wand, I trow by mine intent,
Betokens rule, and cruel chastisement.

The red colour who graithly understood,
Betokens all to great battell and blood.

The green, courage, that thou art now among
In trouble and war thou shalt continue long.

he saphir stone she blessed thee withall,
 happy chance, will God, shall to thee fall.
 The three-fold book is but this broken Land,
 thou must redeem, by worthiness of hand,
 The bras letters do but betoken this,
 The great oppress of war, and meikle miss,
 The which thou must bring to the right again :
 But thou therefore shalt suffer meikle pain.
 The gold betokens honour and worthiness,
 Victor in arms, man-hood and nobleness.
 The silver shows clean life, and heavens bliss
 Thy reward, that mirth thou shalt not miss.
 Dread not therefore, be out of all despair :
 Rather as now hereof I can no mair.
 He thanked him. and thus his leave hath tane,
 To *Corbie* then with his Uncle rade hame :
 Which mirths thus all night sojourned there.
 Upon the morn they graithed them to *Aire*,
 And forth they rade till they came to *Kincace* :
 With dreadfull heart thus speired good *Wallace*,
 Sir *Rannald*, for their Charter of Peace.
 He voy, he said, these words are no lies,
 As leaved at *Corbie* in the kist,
 There thou it laid, thereof none other wist.
 Wallace answered, Had we it here to shaw,
 And they be false, we shall not enter aw.
 He said, I pray thee passe again,
 Though thou would send, thy travel were in vaine,
 But thou or I, none can it bring this tide.
 Great grace it was made him again to ride.
 Wallace returned, took none with him but three,
 One of them knew of this Indentour but he.

Unhap him led, forbid him could he nought,
Of false deceit this good Knight had no thought,
Sir *Rannald* rode but resting to the town,
Witting nothing of all this false treason:
That wicked Sign so ruled that Planet.
Saturn as then was in his highest state,
Above *Juno* in his melancholy,
Jupiter and *Mars* ay cruel of envy:
Saturn as then advanced his nature,
Of tyranny he power had and cure.
Rebels rules in many free Nation.
Troublous weather makes many ships to drown
His dreiching was with *Pluto* in the sea,
As of the Land full of iniquitie.
He wakens war full of Pestilence,
Filling of walls with cruel violence:
Poison is rife amongst these other things;
Sudden slaughter of Emperours and Kings.
When *Sampson* pulled to the ground the pill
Saturn was then into his highest spear.
At *Thebes* als of his power they tell,
Amphiaras sank through the earth to hell.
Of the *Trojan* he had full meikle cure,
When *Achilles* at *Troy* slew good *Hector*.
Burdeous shent, and many Cities mo,
His power yet he hath no hap to ho.
In broad *Britane* feil vengeance hath been seen,
Of this, and more, ye wot well what I mean.
But to this house that stalwart was and strong,
Sir *Rannald* came, and might not tarry long.
A balk was knit all full of ropes keen,
Such a Tolbooth since then was never seen.

Strong men were set the entry for to hald,
 None might win in, but one as they were cald:
 Sir *Rannald* first, to make fewty for his land:
 The Knight went in and would no langer stand.
 A running cord they slipped over his head,
 Hard to the balk, and hanged him to the dead.
 Sir *Brice* the *Blair* next after in he past,
 Unto the death they hasted him full fast:
 By he was entred, his head was in the snare,
 Knit to the balk, hanged to death right there.
 The third entred, great pity was for thy,
 A gentle Knight, Sir *Neil Montgomery*:
 And other feil of landed men about.
 Many went in, but no *Scots* man came out,
 Of *Wallace* part they put to that derf dead,
 Many *Crawfurds* so ended in that stead.
 Of *Carrick* men *Kennedies* slew they als,
 And kind *Campbells*, that never had been false.
 They rebelled not against their righteous Crown;
Sutherland for they put them to confusion.
Barkljes, *Boys*, and *Stewarts* of good kin;
 No *Scot* escaped that time that entred in.
 Upon the balk they hanged many pair,
 Beside them dead, in a nook cuist them there?
 Since the first time that any war was wrought,
 To such a death so many yeed there nought,
 Upon one day through cursed *Saxons* seed:
 Revengeance of this out through the kinred yeed;
 Granted it was from the great *GOD* of heaven,
 Who ordained that law should be their steven,
 To the false *Saxons*, for their false judgement,
 Their wickednesse over all the world is went.

Ye Noble men that are of *Scottish* kind,
Their piteous death ye keep it in your mind,
And us revenge when we are set in throng;
Dolour it is hereon to tarry long.
Thus eighteen score derfly to death they dight;
Of Barons bold, and many worthy Knight.
When they had slain the worthiest was there,
For weak people no longer would they spare.
Into the gaith cult them out off that stead,
As they were born, spoiled, bare, and dead.
Good *Robert Boyd* into the tavern yeed,
With twenty men that doughty were indeed:
Of *Wallace* house, full cruel of intent,
He govern'd them, when *Wallace* was absent.
Keirly returned with his Master again,
Cleland and *Boyd* that meikle were of mair;
Steven of *Ireland* went forth into the street,
A frue woman full soon with him could meet:
He speired at her, What happened in *Aire*?
Sorrow, she said, is nothing else there.
Fear'dly she said, Alace where is *Wallace*?
From us again he passed at *Kincace*.
Go warn his folk, and charge them off the town;
To keep himself, I shall be ready bown.
With her as then no more tarry he made,
To his fellows he went withoutten bade,
And to them told of all this great misfare;
To *Laglane* wood they bowned withoutten maie.
By this *Wallace* was coming wonder fast,
For his friends he was full sore agast:
Unto the Barn sadly he could persue,
To enter in, for he no perill knew.

his true woman upon him loud can call:
 feirs Wallace, feil tempest is befall,
 our best men slain, great pity is to see,
 as bestial hounds hanged over a tree;
 our true Barrons by two and two past in.
 Wallace weeped for great loss of his kin,
 that with unease upon his horse he bade,
 fore for to spier to this woman he rade:
 dear Nice, he said, if thou the truth can tell,
 mine Eme dead? Or how the case befel?
 at of yon Barn forsooth, I saw him born;
 naked, laid low, and cold earth him beforne.
 his frosty mouth I kissed in that stead,
 right now manlike, now bare & brought to dead;
 and with a cloath I covered his lichame;
 for in his life he did never woman shame.
 his sisters son thou art, worthy and wight,
 revenge his death, for Gods sake, at thy might:
 as I shall help, as I am woman true.
 dear wight, he said, great God if that thou knew
 good Robert Boyd, where ever thou can him see,
 William Crawford also, if he living be:
 Adam Wallace would help me in this strife:
 pray to God to send them all on life.
 for Gods sake bid them soon come to me:
 the Justice Innes thou spy for charity,
 and in what fear that they their lodging make:
 soon after that we shal our purpose take.
 to Laglane which hath their succour been,
 due Market, and welcome goods green,
 ereof as then to her he spake no mair,
 his bridle turned, and from her can he fare:

Such mourning made for his dear worthy kin,
He thought for bail, his breast near burst in twine,
As he thus rade in great anger and teen,
Of *Englishmen* there followed him fifteen,
Wight wailed men, that toward him could draw
With a Macer, to teach him to the Law :
Wallace returned in grief and maltalent,
With his sword drawn, amongst them soon he went
The middle of one he manked soon in twa,
The other there upon the head can ta,
The third he strake & through the coast him clare,
The fourth to ground right derfly down he draw
The fifth he hit in great yre in that stead,
Without rescue dreadless he left them dead.
Then his three men had slain the other five,
From them the lave escaped with their life :
Fled to their Lord, and told him of this case.
To *Langlane* wood then rode wight *Wallace*.
The *Sutheron* said : What one he hit right,
Without mercy dreadless to death was dight.
Marvel they had such strength in one should be,
One of their men at each strake he gart die.
Then deemed they it should be *Wallace* wight,
To their language then answered an old Knight
Forsooth, he said, be he escaped this heir,
All your new deed, is eeking of your care.
The Justice said, when there such rumours rose,
Ye would be feared and there came many foes,
That for one man, me think ye like to flee,
And wots not yet indeed if it be he :
And tho it were, I count him but full light,
Who bides here, each Gentleman shall be Knight.

think to deal their lands whole the morn,
 to you about that are of *England* born.
 The *Sutheron* drew to their lodging but mair,
 our thousand whole that night was into *Aire*,
 in great Barns bigged without the town,
 the Justice lay, with many bold Barron.
 Then he gart cry about these wains wyde,
 to *Scots* bairn amongst them there should bide.
 to the Castle he would not pass for ease, (please
 but sojourned there with things that might him
 great purveyance by sea was to them brought,
 with wine and Aile, the best that could be bought;
 no watch was set, because they had no doubt
 of *Scots*-men that living was without.
 laboured in mind they had been all that day,
 of Aile and wine enough chosen had they,
 as beast-like folk took of themselves no keep,
 their veins soon fluid the sloathful sleep:
 through foul gluttony in swair swapped like swine
 their Chiftain was great *Bacchus* god of wine.
 his wife woman long time amongst them was,
 till men she warned, and gart to *Laglane* pass,
 her self foremost: when they with *Wallace* met,
 some comfort then into his heart was set.
 then he them saw, he thanked God of might,
 findings he asked, the woman told him right,
 sleeping as swine are all yon fierce meinie,
 no *Scots* man is in yon companie.
 then *Wallace* said: If they all drunken be,
 all it best with fire them for to see.
 of good men three hundred to him sought:
 the woman told three true *Burgesses* that brought

Out of the town both noble Aile and bread,
And other stuff, as meikle as they might lead.
They ate and drank, the Scots men that mought,
The Nobles then, *top* hath to *Wallace* brought.
Sadly he said: Dear friends, now ye see,
Our kin are slain, therefore is great pitie,
Through foul murther, the great despite is more
Now some remead I would we set therefore:
Suppose that I was made Warden to be,
Part are away, such charge is put to me,
And ye are here come in of als good blood,
And righteous born, by adventure als good.
Als foreward fair, als likely in person,
As ever I was: then for conclusion,
Let us choose five of this good companie,
Then Cavelis cast who shall our Master be.
Wallace and *Boyd*, and *Crawfurd* of renown,
And *Adam* als then Lord of *Richartown*.
His father then was visied with sickness,
God hath him tane into his lasting grace:
The fifth *Auchinlek*, in war a noble man:
Cavelis to cast about the five began.
It would on him, for ought they would devise
Continually, while they had casten thrise.
Then *Wallace* rose, and out a sword can draw:
He said: I vow to the Maker of aw,
And to Mary his Mother Virgin clear,
Mine Uncles death now shall be sold full dear,
With many mo of our dear worthy kin:
First ere I eat or drink, I shall begin:
For sleuth or sleep shal never remain with me,
Of this tempest while I avenged be:

then all inclined right humble of one accord,
 and him received as their Chieftain and Lord.
 Wallace a Lord he may be taken well,
 though rural folk thereof have little feel.
 they deem no Lord, but lands be their part.
 had he the world, and be wretched in heart,
 he is no Lord : but to the worthiness :
 cannot be but freedom, Lordliness.
 at the Rods they make full many one,
 Which worthy are, yet lands have they none.
 this discussing we leave *Heralds* to end,
 Into my matter briefly I will wend.

Wallace commanded a Burghers for to get
 fine calk enough, that his dear Nice might set,
 at ilk gate where *Sutheron* were on a raw,
 And twenty men he gart soon widdies thraw.
 Each man upon his Arms a pair he threw,
 Unto to the town full fast they can persue.
 The woman past before him subtilly,
 Calked each gate, they needed not go by,
 Then fastned they the doors with widdies fast,
 To stapil and hespe, with many sikker cast.
 Wallace gart *Boyd* near hand the Castle ge,
 With fifty men a jeopardy to ma :
 If any escape the fire when that they saw,
 All fast the gate he ordained them to draw :
 The rest with him about the Barns yeed :
 This true woman him served well indeed :
 With lint and fire that hasty kendle would,
 In every nook they fastned bleases bold.
 Wallace commanded to all his men about,
 No *Sutheron* men that they should let break out.

What ever he be, rescues of their kin,
From the red fire, himself shall pass therein;
The lemand low soon lanced upon hight,
Forsooth, he said, this is a pleasant sight:
To our hearts it shall be some redress,
Were these away, their power were the less.
Unto the Justice himself on loud can caw,
Let us to brugh our men from your false Law,
That living are, and scaped from your heir,
Deal not their land, the unlaw is over sair:
Thou hadst no right, it shal on thee be seen:
The rumour rose with careful cry and keen.
The bail-fire burnt right brimly upon lost,
To sleeping men their wakning was unsoft.
The sight without mas awfull for to see,
In all the world no greater pain might be,
Then they within suffered for to dwel,
That ever was wrought, or Purgatory, but Hell.
A pain of Hell well near it may be call'd,
Made folk in fire hampered manyfold.
Feil biggings burnt that worthy were and wight,
Got none away, knave, Captain, nor Knight,
When brands fell of roof-trees them among.
Some rudely rose in bitter pains strong,
Some naked burnt with belches all away,
Some never rose, but smooored where they lay,
Some rushed fast to Aire, if they might win,
Blinded with fire, their deeds were full dim.
The reek filled with filth of carion,
Amongst the fire right foul of infection:
The people beired like wood beasts in that tyde,
Within the wall ramping on either syde,

might with rueth, and many griesly groan,
 me grimly grat, while ther life days were gone:
 me doors sought the entry for to get,
 at Scots-men so wisely them beset,
 any brake by adventure of that stead,
 With swords soon brimed they were to dead,
 else again by force driven in the fire:
 here scaped none, but burnt bone and lyre.
 he stink skailed of dead bodies so wide,
 he Scots abhorred near hand them for to byde,
 eed to the wind, and let them even alone,
 While the red fire had that fierce blood overgone.
 Frier, *Drumlaw*, was Pryor then of *Aire*,
 even score with him that night took harbry there,
 into his Innes, for he might not them let.
 While near mid-night a watch on them he set,
 himself woke well, while he the fire saw rise,
 some mends he thought to take of that surprise.
 His brethren seven soon to harness they yeed,
 himself Chifstain, the remanent to lead.
 The best they wail of armour and good gear,
 Then weapons took right awfull in effeir.
 These eight Friers in three parts they go,
 With swords drawn, in every house yeed two.
 Soon entred in where *Sutheron* sleeping were,
 Upon them set with straiks sad and sair:
 Feil freiks there the Friers dang to dead:
 Some naked fled, and got out of that stead.
 The water sought, abased out of sleep:
 In the Friers well that was both long and deep,
 Feil of them fell, that brake out of that place,
 Drowned to ground, and dead withoutten grace.

Slain and drowned was all that harbored there,
Men call it yet, The *Friers* blessing of *Aire*.
Few folk of vail was leaved upon case
In the Castle, Lord *Perse* from that place;
Before the Heir from thence to *Glasgow* drew,
Of wine and stuff, it was to purvey new.
Yet they within saw the fire burning stout,
With short advise ished, and made no doubt.
The bushment then, as vvarriours vwise and vvight,
Let them alone, and to the house past right.
Boyd wan the port, entred with all his men,
Keepers in it were left but nine or ten.
The formost soon himself sealed in hand,
Made quite of him, then slew all that he fand.
Of purveyance in the Castle was none,
Short time before from it *Perse* was gone.
The Earl *Arnulff* had perceived that hold,
Who in the town was burnt to powder cold.
Boyd gart remain of his men twenty still,
Himself past forth to wit of *Wallace* will.
Keeping the town while nought was leaved there,
But the wood fire, and biggings burnt full bare.
Of likely men that were born of *England*,
By sword and fire, that night died five thousand.
When *Wallace* men were well together met,
Good freinds, he said, ye knew that there was set,
Such law as this now into *Glasgow* town,
The Bishop *Beik*, and *Perse* of renown:
Therefore I will in haste ye thither fare,
Of our good kin some part is loled there.
He gart soon the Burgeses to him call,
And gave command in general to them all,

In keeping they should take the house of *Aie*,
 And hold it whole, while time that we hear mair.
 To bide our King, Castles I would we had.
 Cast we down all, we may be deemed too bad.
 They gait meat come, for he had fasted lang;
 Little he took, then bowned him to gang.
 Horse they choose that *Sutheron* had brought
 Anew at will, and off the town can fare. (there,
 Right wonder fast rode this good Chevalry,
 Three hundred whole was in that company;
 To *Glasgow* bridge, that bigged was of tree,
 Soon passed over, ere *Sutheron* might them see;
 Lord *Persie* wight, that busie was in wear,
 Sembled his men right awfull in effeir,
 Then deemed they all that it was wight *Wallace*,
 He had before escaped through many case.
 The Bishop *Beik*, and *Persie* that was wight,
 A thousand led of men in Arms bright.
Wallace saw well what number sembled there,
 He made his men in two parts for to fare,
 Graithed them well without the towns end,
 He called *Anchinleck*, for he the passage kend
 Uncle, he said, be busy in the wear,
 Whether will ye the Bishops tail up bear,
 Or pass before, and take his bennison.
 He answered him with right thort provision:
 Unbishopsed yet, forsooth, I trow ye be,
 Your self shal first his blessing take for me:
 For sickerly ye served it best to night,
 To bear his tail we shall with all our might.
Wallace answered: Since we must sundry gang,
 Eril it is if ye bide from us lang;

In

For yon are men will not be soon agast,
Fra time we meeter, for GODs sake hy you fast.
Our sundring I would no *Sutheron* saw,
Behind them come in throw the North-east raw.
Good men of war are in *Northumberland*.
They parted thus, took other by the hand.
Auchinleck said : We shall do as we may,
We would like evil to bide ought long away,
A bousteous stail betwixt us soon must be ;
But to the right Almighty GOD have eye.
Adam Wallace and *Auchinleck* was bown,
Seven score with them on back-side of the town.
Right fast they yeed, while they were out of sight
The other part arrayed them full right.
Wallace and *Boyd* the plain street up can go,
The *Sutheron* marveiled because they saw no mo
Their *Ensenzie* cryed on the *Persies* side,
With-Bishop *Beik*, that boldly could abyde.
Afore-sembly was at their meeting seen,
As fire from flint it fared them between.
The hardy *Scots* right awfully them abade,
Brought feil to ground through weed that was we
Pierced plats with points stiff of steel, (mad
By force of of hand gart many cruel kneel.
The strong stour rose as smoak about them fast,
Or mist through Sun, up to the clouds past.
To help himself, each one had meikle need :
The worthy *Scots* stood in a fellon dread,
Yet foreward fast they preassed for to be,
And they on them, great wonder was to see.
The *Persies* men in war were used wel,
Right fiercely fought, and sonzet not a deal.

Adam Wallace and Auchinleck came in,
 A part of Sutheron right cruelly they twin,
 Returned to them as noble men of wear,
 The Scots got roam, and many down they bear.
 The new counter assayed them so fast,
 Through Englishmen made stops at the last.
 Then Wallace self into the fellon throng,
 With his good sword, that heavy was and long,
 At Peryses face with a good will he bare,
 Both bone and brain the frushed steel throgh share
 Three hundred men when Lord Perse was dead,
 Out of the gate the Bishop Beik they lead.
 For then them thought it was no time to bide,
 By the Frier Kirk, to a wood there besyde :
 In the Forrest for looth they carryed nought.
 On fresh horse to Bothwell soon they sought.
 Wallace followed with worthy men and wight :
 Forfoughten they were, and travelled all the night
 Yet feil they flew into that chase that day :
 The Bishops self, and good men got away :
 Dymar Wallange rescued them in that place,
 That Knight full oft did great harm to Wallace.
 Wallace began that night at ten hours in Aire :
 On day by nine in Glasgow sembled there :
 By one after noon at Bothwell yet he was,
 Reproved Wallange ere he would further pass :
 Then turned again, as witnesses well the book,
 To Dundaff rode, and their resting he took :
 Told good sir Iahn of their tydings in Aire,
 Great mean he made, he was not with them there.
 Wallace sojourned in Dundaffe at his will,
 Five dayes out, till tydings came him till.

Out of the hight where good men were forlorn
For *Buchane* rose, *Arbol*, *Menteith* and *Lorn*,
Upon *Argyle*, a fellon war they make,
For *Edwards* sake this they can undertake.
The Knight *Campbell* in *Argyle* then was still,
With his good men, against King *Edwards* will,
And kept free *Lochow* his heritage,
But *Makfadyean* did him great outrage.
This *Makfadyean* to *Englishmen* had sworn,
Edward gave to him both *Argyle* and *Lorn*.
False *John* of *Lorne* to that gift can accord,
In *England* then he was new made a Lord.
Thus falsely he gave over his heritage,
And took at *London* of *Edward* a great wage.
Duncan of *Lorn* yet for the Land strave,
While *Makfadyean* over-set him with the lave
Put him on force to good *Campbell* the Knight,
Which into war was wise, worthy and wight.
This *Makfadyean* was entred into *Scotland*,
And marvellously that tyrant took in hand,
With his power, the which I spake of aye,
These three Lordships assembled to him there,
Fifteen thousand of cursed folk indeed,
Of all gathering, the Host he had to lead,
And many of them was out of *Ireland* brought,
Bairns nor wives, that people spared nought,
Wasted the Land as far as they might ga:
These beastly folk could not but burn and sla:
Into *Lochow* he entred suddenly, (th
The good Knight *Campbell* saw good defence for
To *Craighumyre* with three hundred he yeed,
That strength they held, for all their cruel feed.

then brake the Bridge that they should over pass,
 at through a foord where narrow passage was,
 bandonly *Campbel* against them bade,
 ast upon *Ause*, that was both deep and braid.
Makfadyean was upon the other side,
 and there on force behoved him to byde :
 or at the foord he durst not enter out,
 or good *Campbel* might set him then in doubt.
Makfadyean sought, and a small passage fand,
 and he leasure he might passe off the land,
 betwixt a Rock and a great water side :
 but four in front, there might none go nor ride.
 into *Lochow* was bestial great plencie,
 Where that he thought with all his Host to be,
 And other stuff that they had with them brought.
 But all his Host availed him right nought.
Duncan of *Lorn* hath seen this sudden case,
 from good *Campbel* he went to seek *Wallace*,
 Some help to get of their torment and teen,
 Together before in *Dundee* had they been,
 Learning at school, into their tender age :
 He thought to slack *Makfadyeans* bie courage.
Gilmichel then, with *Duncan* forth had dight,
 A guide he was, a foot-man wonder wight.
 Soon got they wit where *Wallace* lodged was.
 With their complaint to his presence they passe.
 Earl *Malcome* als the *Lennox* held at peace,
 With his good men to *Wallace* can he preasse,
 To him there came good *Richard* of *Lundie*,
 Into *Dundaff* he would no longer ly.
 Sir *Iohn* the *Graham* als bowned him to ride,
Makfadyeans war so grieved him that ride.

C H A P. II.

How Wallace slew Makfadyean.

Then *Wallace* thought his great power to see
In what array he ruled that Countrey :
The *Ruikby* then keepest with great wrong
Striviling Castle, that stalwart was and strong :
When *Wallace* came by South it in a vale,
To Earl *Malcome* he said he would it sail ;
In diverse parts he gart dissever his men,
Of their power, the *Sutheron* should not ken.
Earl *Malcome* bade in bushment out of sight,
Wallace with him took good Sir *John* the knight
And an hundred of wise war-men about,
Through *Striviling* rade, if any would ish out
Toward the Bridge the gainest way they passe :
When *Ruikby* saw where that their power was,
He took seven score of Archers that was there,
Upon *Wallace* they followed wonder fair,
That feil bicker did them meikle dear.
Wallace in hand gripped a noble spear,
Again returned, and hath the foremost slain.
Sir *John* the *Graham*, that mickle was of main,
Amongst them rade with a good spear in hand,
The first he slew that he before him fand :
Upon another his spear in sunder yeed :
A sword he drew, which helped him in need,
English Archers upon them can renew,
That his good horse with arrows soon they slew.
On foot he was, when *Wallace* hath it seen :
He lighted soon with men of arms full keen,
Amongst the rout fighting full wonder fast,
Then *Englishmen* returned at the last :

the Castle they would have been full fain,
 Earl *Malcome* with men of meikle main,
 wixt the *Sutheron* and the gates yeed,
 ny they slew that doughty were indeed :
 the great preasse *Wallace* and *Ruikby* met,
 ch his good sword a straik upon him set,
 tly to death the old *Ruikby* he drave,
 two sons escaped amongst the lave,
 the Castle by adventure they yeed,
 ch thirty men, no mo escaped that dread.
 e *Lennox* men with their good Lord that was,
 om the Castle they said they would not passe :
 or well they wist it might not holden be
 or no long time, for they this ordained he.
 l *Malcome* took the house to keep that tyde.
Wallace would not from his first purpoie byde :
 stance he made to this good Lord and wise,
 om them to passe he would in no kind wise,
 hile that he had *Striviling*, the Castle strong.
 ue men him told, they might not hold it long :
 hen *Wallace* thought most on *Makfadyean*,
 f *Scottish*-men he had slain many an.
Wallace avowed, that he should wroken be
 On that *Rebald*, or else therefore to die.
 Of tyranny King *Edward* thought him good,
 ow born he was, and als of simple blood.
 Thus *Wallace* was sore grieved in his intent,
 To this journey right earnestly he went.
 At *Striviling* bridge assembled to him right,
 Two thousand men that worthy were and wight,
 Toward *Argyle* he bowed him to ride,
Duncan of *Lorn* was their true sikker guide.

Of old *Ruikby* the which I spake of aire,
Two sons on live in *Striviling* lived there.
When those brethren conceived all at right,
This house to hold, that they no longer might,
For cause why they wanted both men and meate,
With Earl *Malcome* they made them for to trea,
Grace of their lives, and they that with them wa
Gave over the house, then could to *England* pa
On the third day that *Wallace* from them rade
With King *Edward* full many years they bade.
In *Bruces* wars again came in *Scotland*,
Striviling to keep, one of them took in hand.
Mention of *Bruce* is oft in *Wallace* book,
To fend his right full meikle pain he took:
Wherefore should I here tarry any ma ?
To *Wallace* forth now shortly will I ga.
Duncan of *Lorn*, *Gilmichil* from him send,
A spy to be, for he the Countrey kend,
By our party was past by *Straithfillan*,
The small foot-folk began to iik ilk ane,
And horse also on force behoved to fail,
Then *Wallace* thought that company to weal.
Good men, he said, this is not meet for us,
In broken array, if we come to them thus,
We may take skaith, and harm our foes but smal
To them in like we may not semble all.
Tarry we long in plain field while they get,
Upon them soon so well we may not set.
Part we must leave, us following to be:
With me shall passe our power into three.
Five hundred ficht to himself hath he tane,
Of West-land-men, were worthy known ilk ane.

to Sir John the Graham as many ordained he,
 and five hundred to Richard of Lundie.
 that part was Wallace of Richartown,
 all good deed he was ay ready boun.
 ve hundred left, and might not with them go,
 suppose that they to bide was wonder wo.
 thus Wallace Host began to take the hight
 ver a mountain, then passed out of sight:
 Glendocher their spy met them again,
 with Lord Campbel, then was our folk right fain:
 their meeting great blythnesse might he seen,
 three hundred led that cruel were and keen:
 he comfort them, and bade them have no dread.
 on beastly folk they want weapons and weed,
 on will they flee, and we shortly pursue,
 to Loch Duchan full suddenly they drew.
 then Wallace said, A life we shall all ta,
 or here is none will from his fellow ga.
 on the Mosse a scurriour soon found he,
 he spy they send, that Countrey for to see.
 to scoure the land Makfadyean had him send,
 at of Craigmore that day he thought to wend.
 Ilmichil fast followed upon him there,
 with a good sword that well and sharply share,
 made quite of him, that tydings told he nane.
 he out-spy thus was losed from Makfadyean.
 then Wallace Host upon their foot can light,
 their hors they left thogh they wer never so wight
 or moss and craig they might no longer dree,
 then Wallace said: Who goes best, let see:
 ut through the mosse deliveredly they yeed.
 then took the hold, whereof they had most dread.
 Endlong

Endlong the shore, ay three in front they past,
While all within were sembled at the last.
Lord Campbel said, We have chosen this hold,
I trow to *God* their wakening shall be cold :
Here is no gate to flee yon people can,
But rocks high, and waters deep and wan.
Eighteen hundred of doughty men indeed,
On the great host but more processe they yeed,
Fighting on front, and meikle mastery made,
The frayed folk busked withoutten bade :
Rudely to ray they rushed them again,
Great part of them were men of meikle main.
Good *Wallace* men so stoutly can them stier,
The battel on back, five aiker braid they bear.
Into the stour feil tyrants gart they kneel :
Wallace in hand had a good sword of steel,
Whom ever he hit, brimly down they bare,
Rowmed him about a large rude and mare.
Sir John the *Graham* indeed was well worthy,
Good *Campbel* als, and *Richard* of *Lundy*.
Adam Wallace, and *Robert Boyd* in fear,
Amongst their foes where deeds was sold so dear
The fellaon stour was able for to see.
Makfadyean then so great debate made he,
With *Ireland* men hardy and couragious :
The stalwart strife right hard and perillous,
Aboundance of blood, from wounds wide & wan
Sticked to dead on ground lay many a man.
Two hours large into the stour they stand,
The fiercest they enough of fighting fand :
That *Jop* himself well wist not who should win,
But *Wallace* men would not in sunder twin :

help themselves they were of hardy will,
 Ireland blood full fellonly they spill :
 with feil fighting, made flops through the thrang,
 the false part our wight war-men so dang,
 at they to bide might have no longer might.
 the Ireland folk then made them for the flight,
 craigs clam, and some in water flet,
 so thousand there drowned withoutten let.
 on Scots-men bade still into the field,
 st weapons them from, & on their knees kneel'd
 with piteous voice they cryed on Wallace,
 at Gods sake, to take them in his grace.
 heved he was, but rueth of them he had,
 ceived them fair with countenance full sad :
 our own blood we should have great pitie,
 ok ye slay none of Scots will yeelden be :
 out-land men, let none escape with their life.
 Makfadyean fled for all his fellow strife,
 to a cave within a clift of stone.
 der Cragemore, with fifty hath he gone?
 uncan of Lorn his leave at Wallace askt.
 Makfadyean with worthy men he past :
 granted him to put them all to dead :
 ey left none then, but broght Wallace his head,
 on a spear through the field it bare.
 e Lord Campbel then hint it by the hair,
 h on Cragemore he heght it for to stand,
 on the stone, for honour of Ireland,
 e life-like men that were of Scotland born,
 on at his faith he gart them all be sworn :
 tored them that would come to his fies,
 let none slay that would come to his peis.

After

After this deed in *Lorn* then could he fare,
Ruled the Land had been in meikle care :
In *Ardchatan* a counsel he gart cry,
Where many men came to his Senzoury :
All *Lorn* he gave to *Duncan* that was wight,
And bade him hold in *Scotland* with the right,
And thou shalt brook this land in heritage,
Thy brothers son in *London* hath great wage :
Yet will he come, he shall the lands have,
I would tyne none that verity might save.
Many true *Scots* to *Wallace* could persue,
At *Ardchatan* from feil strengths they drew :
A good Knight came, and with him men sixtie,
He had been oft in many jeopardie
With *Englishmen*, and sonzier not a deal,
Ay from their faith, he fended him full well :
Keeped him free, though King *Edward* had swor
Sir *John Ramsay* that righteous was born,
Of *Ochterhouse*, and other Lands Lord,
And Sheriff als, as my book will record,
Of noble blood, and old Ancestery,
Continued well with worthy Chevalry.
Into *Strochane* long time he had been,
At great debate amongst his enemies keen :
Right wighly wan his living into wear.
To him and his, *Sutherland* did meikle dear.
Well he eschewed, and suffered great distresse,
His son was called, the flower of courtlinesse,
As witnesses well into this short treaty,
After the *Bruce*, who reads that History.
He ruled well both into war and peace,
Alexander Ramsay to name he heght but lies.

When it was wear, to arms he him cast,
 Under the Crown he was one of the best.
 In time of peace to courtlines he yeed,
 But to gentrice he took no other heed.
 That Gentle-men had not with *Ramsay* been,
 Of courtlines they counted not a preen.
 Freedom and truth he had as men would as,
 Since he began, no better Squyer was.
Forburgh hold he wan right manfully,
 Then held it long, while traitours treasonably
 Caused his death. I will not tell you how.
 Of such things I will go by as now.
 Have had blame to say the soothfastness,
 Therefore I will but lightly run that race.
 But it be thing that plainly slander is,
 Or such, I trow, they should not deem no misse.
 Of *Alexander* as now I speak no more,
 His father came, as I you told before.
Wallace of him right full great comfort hes,
 For he well could do harming unto foes.
 In war he was right meikle for to prise:
 Busy, and true, both sober, wight, and wise.
 A good Prelat als to *Ardshatan* sought,
 Of his Lordship as then he brooked nought.
 His worthy Clerk came in of hie linage,
 Of *Sinkler* blood not fourty years of age.
 Chosen he was by the Popes consent,
 Of *Dunkeld* Lord, was made with good intent.
 But *Englishmen* that *Scotland* gripped hail,
 Of benefice they let them brook but small.
 When he saw well therefore he might not mute,
 To save his life, three years he dwelt in *Butte*:
 Lived

Lived as he might, and kept ay good part,
Under *James* then Lord *Stewart*.

While good *Wallace*, which *Scotland* wan
Restored this Lord to his living again.

And many mo which long had been overthrow
Wallace them put righteously to their own.

The small Host the which I spake of aire,
Into the hight that *Wallace* leaved there,
Came to the field where *Makfadyean* had been
Took that was left, both weeds & weapons shene
Through *Lorn* they past, as goodly as they could
Of their number they had not lost one man.

On the fifth day they wan to *Ardchatan*,
Where *Wallace* bade with good men many an.
He welcom'd them upon a goodly wise,
And said, They were right meikle for to prise.
All true *Scots* he honoured into wear,
Gave that he wan, himself kept no gear.

CHAP III. How *Wallace* wan *S. Johnstoun*

When *Wallace* wold no longer sojourn there
From *Ardchatan* out through that land
they fare

Toward *Dunkeld*, with good men of renown,
His most thought then was of Saint *Johnstoun*.
He called *Ramsay*, that good Knight great of va
Sadly advised, besought him of counsel:
Of Saint *Johnstoun* now have I remembrance,
There have I been, and losed men by chance:
But ay for one we gart ten of them die,
And yet me thinks that is no mends for me.
I would assay from this land ere we gang,
And let them wit they occupy here wrang.

Then *Ramsay* said, That town they may not keep,
 The walls are low, suppose the ditch be deep:
 We have anew, that shall them cumber so,
 Will up the dike that we may plainly go
 In plain battel, a thousand over at ones,
 From this power they shal not hold yon waines.
Wallace was glad that he such comfort made:
 Worth talking thus, unto *Dunkeld* they rade.
 Three dayes there they lodged with pleasance,
 While time they had fore-seen their ordinance.
Ramsay gart big great Bastailyies of tree,
 By good wrights, the best of that Countie.
 When they were wrought, betaght thē men to lead
 The water down, while they came near that stead;
 For *John Ramsay* right goodly was their guide,
 Guided them well at his will for to bide:
 The great Host then about the Village past,
 With earth and stone they filled dykes fast?
 Raiks they made on timber long and wight,
 For to rowm passage to the walls they dight.
 All Bastailyies right strongly up they rose,
 With men of arms soon to assaily goes.
 For *John the Graham*, and *Ramsay* that was wight,
 Beturate bridge assieged in all their might.
 And *Wallace* self at mid-side of the town,
 With good men of arms that was to bargain bown.
 The *Sutherland* men made great defence that tide,
 With artailyie that fellon was to bide:
 With tablaster ganzie and stones fast,
 And hand-guns right brimly out they cast:
 Ganziet with spears as men of arms keen.
 The noble *Scots* that worthy ay have been,

At hand-straiks fra they ttogether met,
With *Sutherland* blood their weapons loon they wet,
Yet *Englishmen* that worthy were in wear,
Into that stour right boldly can them bear :
But all for nought availed them that deed,
The *Scots* through force upon them in they yeed
A thousand men over walls yeed hastily,
Into the Town rose hideous noise and cry.
Ramsay and *Graham* the turate gate have win,
And entred in, where great strife did begin.
A true Squyer, which *Ruthwen* heght to name
Came to the assault with good Sir *John Graham*
Thirty with him, of men that proved well,
Amongst their foes, with weapons stiff as steel.
When that the *Scots* assembled on either side,
No *Sutherland* was that might their dints abide:
Two thousand soon were foyled under feet,
Of *Sutherland* blood they sticked in the street.
Sir *John Psewart* saw well the Town was tint,
Took him to flight, and would no longer stint:
In a light Birge, and with him men fixtie,
The water down, sought succour to *Dundie*.
Wallace bode still while the fourth day at morn
And left none there that was of *England* born.
Riches they got, both gold and other good,
Plenish: the Town again with *Scots* blood.
Ruthwen he left their Captain for to be,
In heritage gave him the Office of fee
Of all *Strathern*, and Sheriff of the Town,
Then in the North good *Wallace* made him bo
In *Aberdene* he gart a Counsel cry,
True *Scottish-men* should assemble hastily,

to Cowper herade, to visit that Abbay :
 the English Abbot was fled from thence away .
 shop Sinkler without longer abade,
 let them at Glams, syn forth with them he rade :
 to Brechin they lodged all that night.
 on on the morn Wallace gart graith at right,
 displayed abroad the Banner of Scotland,
 good array with noble men at hand.
 caus'd plainly cry, that saved should be none
 of Sutheron blood, where they might be overgone
 plain battel throughout the Merns they ryde :
 the Englishmen that durst not them abyde,
 fore the Host full fearedly they flee
 Dunnoter, a strength within the sea.
 further they might win out of the Land,
 they sembled ther, while they were four thousand.
 the kirk they ran, & thought girth to have tane,
 the lave remained upon the rock of stane :
 the Bishop then began treaty to ma,
 their lives to get, out of the Land to ga :
 they were red, and durst not well assay :
 Wallace in fire caus'd set all hastily,
 went up the Kirk, and all that was therein :
 our the rock the lave ran with great din.
 he hung on craigs right dolefully to die :
 elap, some fell, some fluttered in the sea :
 Sutheron on life was leaved in that hold,
 they within were burnt to powder cold.
 when this was done, they fell on knees down,
 the Bishop asked absolution.
 Wallace leugh, and said : I forgive you all :
 ye war-men that repents for so small ?

They rewed us not within the town of *Aire*,
Our true Barrons when that they hanged there,
To *Aberdene* then safely can they pass,
Where *Englishmen* right busie flitting was.
An hundred ships that rather bear and aire,
To curse their goods, in Haven were byding there
But *Wallace* Hoast came on them suddenly.
There scaped none of all that great Navy :
But feil servants in them was leaved none,
At an eb sea the *Scots* is on them gone,
Took out the gear, then set the ships on fire,
The men on land they burnt both bone and lyer
Yeed none away, but Priests, wives and bairns
Made they debate, they scaped not but harms.
Into *Buchan*, *Wallace* made him to ryde,
Where Lord *Bewmont* was ordained to abyde :
Earl he was made but of short time before,
He brooked it not for all his bousteous shore.
When he wist well that *Wallace* coming was,
He left the Land, and could to *Slanis* passe,
And then by ship fled in *England* again.
Wallace rade through the North-land into plain
At *Cromarty* feil *Englishmen* they slew,
The worthy *Scots* unto him could pursue.
Returned again, and came to *Aberdene*,
With his blyth Host, upon the Lammas even :
Establisht the land, as he thought best to be,
Then with his Host he passed to *Dundee*.

CHAP. IV. How Wallace laid a siege to Dundee, and gave battel to Kirkingham Thesaurer to King Edward; and to the Earl of Warran, at Striviling Bridge.

GART set a siege about the Castle strang.
 I leave him there and further will I gang.
 Aymar Wallange hasted him full fast,
 to England with his whole houshold past.
 Bothwel he left, was Murrays heritage,
 and took him then to go to Edwards wage.
 As his own Land he left for evermair,
 Wallace deed great tydings told he there:
 As Englishmen sore mourned in their mood,
 That losed here both life, lands, and good;
 Edward as then could not in Scotland fare,
 Kirkinghame that was his Thesaurer,
 With him a Lord that Earl was of Warran,
 Charged them with numbers many an,
 That well beleen in Scotland for to ride,
 Striviling till he ordained them to bide,
 Till he might come with ordinance of England
 And again he thought to take on hand.
 As Hoast past forth, and had but little dread,
 The Earl Patrick received them at Tweed.
 As he had at good Wallace before,
 Long time by past, and that increased more;
 Through a case it hapned of his wife,
 That from him she held into a strife.
 Though the supply of Wallace into plain,
 He by means got this Castle again:
 Long time ere then, and yet he could not cease,
 Till Wallace he proved in many a prease,

With *Englishmen* supplied them at his might,
Contrair *Scotland* they wrought full great unright
Their Muster then was awful for to see,
Of fighting men thousands there were sixtie :
To *Striveling* bridge, past ere they liked to byde
To *Earl Malcome* a sledge they laid that tyde,
And thought to keep the command of their King
But good *Wallace* wrought for another thing.
Dundee he left, and made a good Chiftain,
With two thousand to keep that house of stane,
Of North-land men, and dwellers of *Dundee*,
The *Lamine* night to *Saint Iohnstoun* went he:
Upon the morn to Sheriff-mure he rode,
And there a while in good array he bode.
Sir Iohn the Graham said : We have undertane
With lesse power, such thing that well is gane.
Then *Wallace* said, wher such things comes of need
We should thank God, that makes us for to speed
But near the bridge my purpose is to be,
And work for them some subtil jeopardie.
Ramsay answered : The bridge we may keep we
Of way about, the *Sutheron* have little feil.
Wallace, sent Iop the battel for to set,
To twesday next to fight withoutten let :
On saturday unto the bridge they rade,
Of good plain boords was well and jointly made
Gart watchers wait, that none should to them
A wright he took, the subtilest that was,
And ordained him to saw the boords in two,
By the mid-trest, that none might over it go :
On cornel bands nailed it full soon,
Then filled it with clay, as nothing had been do

he other end he ordained for to be,
 low it should stand upon rollers of tree,
 When one were out, that the rest down should fall
 himself under, he ordained therewithall:
 bound on the trest, in a cradle to sit,
 to loose the pin, when *Wallace* let him wit,
 at with an horn, when it was time to be,
 all the Host no man should blow but he.
 The day approached of the great battel
 the *Englishmen* for power would not fail:
 y fix they were against one of *Wallace*.
 fifty thousand made them to battel place,
 the remanent bade at the Castle still,
 both field and house they thought to keep at will:
 the worthy *Scots* upon the other side,
 the plain field took, on foot made them to byde.
Kirkinghame the vanguard then led he,
 with twenty thousand of likely men to see.
 thirty thousand the Earl of *Vvarran* had,
 at he did then as the wise man him bade:
 all the first Host before him over was send.
 some *Scots-men* that well the matter kend,
 made *Wallace* blow, and said, they were ane
 he hastid, not, but sadly could persue,
 while *Vvarrans* Host thick on the bridge he saw,
 from *Iap* the horn he hint, and could it blaw,
 asperly, and warned good *John VVright*:
 he roller out he strake then with great sight,
 the rest yeed down, when that the pins out goes;
 in hideous cry among the people rose;
 both horse and man into the water fell,
 the hardy *Scots*, that would no longer dwell:

Set on the rest with straiks sad and sair,
Of them thereover as then loved they were.
At the fore-breast they proved hardily,
Wallace and Graham, Boyd, Ramsay and Lundy
All in the flour fighting face for face.
The *Sutherland* back retired in that place,
At the first straik five aker broad and more.
Wallace on foot a great sharp spear he bore,
Amongst the thickest of the preasse he gaes,
On *Kirkinghame* a straik he chosen hes,
In the birnith that polisht was full bright,
The prunzeing head the plates peirced right,
Through the body sticked him but rescue:
Derfly to death that Chistain was adue.
Both man and horse at that straik he bare down.
The *English* Host that were in battel bown,
Comfort they tint when their Chistain was slain,
And many one began to flee in plain:
Yet worthy men bade still into that stead,
While ten thousand were brought unto the dead
Then fled the lave, and might no longer bide.
Succour they sought in many diverse side:
Some East, some West, and some fled to the North
Seven thousand whole at once fluttered in *Forth*,
Plunged in deep, drowned without mercie,
None left on life of all that whole meirzie.
Of *Wallace* Host no man was slain of vail,
But *Andrew Murray* into that strong battel.
The South-part then that saw their men was tint,
As fiercely fled, as fire doth from the flint.
The place hath left, *Striviling* Castle and Town
Toward *Dumbar* in great halte made them bown

When *Wallace* Host had won the field by might,
 Took up the bridge, and loosed good *John Wright*;
 On the flyers then followed wonder fast,
 Earl of *Malcome* als out of the Castle past,
 With *Lennox* men to stuff the chase good speed,
 Ay by the way they gart feil *Sutherland* bleed.
 In the *Torwood* they gart full many die.
 The Earl of *Warrane* then can full fiercely flee,
 With *Corspatrick* that graithly can him guide,
 Unchanging horse, out through the Land they ride
 Straight to *Dumbar*, but few with them they led.
 Many were slain over sloathfully that fled.
 The *Scottish* horse had run full wonder lang;
 Many gave over, and might no further gang.
Wallace and *Graham* ever together bade,
 At *Haddingtown* full great slaughter they made
 Of *Englishmen*, when their horse tyred had.
 When *Ramsay* came, good *Wallace* was full glad,
 With him was *Boyd*, and *Richard* of *Lundie*,
 Three hundred whole was of good Chevalrie.
 And *Adam Wallace* als of *Richartown*,
 With Earl *Malcome*, they found at *Haddingtown*.
 The *Scottishmen* on slaughter tarried was,
 While to *Dumbar* the two *Christians* could pass:
 Full spitefull were for their contrary case.
Wallace followed, while they got in that place.
 Of their best men, and *Kirkingham* of renown,
 Thirty thousand was dead but redemption,
 Beside *Beltown*: *Wallace* returned again
 To follow more, then was it but in vain.
 In *Haddingtown*, lodging he bade all night,
 Upon the morn to *Striviling* passed right,

On the Assumption day befell this case.
 Ay loved be the Lord of his good grace :
 Convoyer oft he was to good *Wallace*,
 And helped him in many sundry place.
Wallace in haste soon after this battel,
 A great oath took of all the Barrons hail,
 That with good will would come to his presence,
 He heght them als to byde at their defence :
 Sir *John Menteith* was then of *Arran* Lord,
 To *Wallace* came, and made a plain concord :
 With witness there with his oath he him band,
 Lawty to keep to *Wallace* and *Scotland* :
 Who would not with free will to right apply,
Wallace by force punisht them rigorously :
 Part put to death, part put in prison strang,
 Great word of him through both these Realms
Dundie they got soon by a short treaty, (rang
 But for their lives they fled away by fes.
English Captains that houses had in hand,
 Left Castles free, and stole out of the land.
 Within ten dayes after this time was gone,
English Captains in *Scotland* then was none,
 Except *Barmick* and *Roxburgh* Castles wight,
 Yet *Wallace* thought to bring them to the right.

THat time there was a worthy true Barron;
 To name he heght *Christel* of *Setoun*,
 In *Iedburgh* wood, for safety he had been,
 Against *Sutheron* full well he could conteen.
Edward could not from *Scots* faith him get,
 Though they a million gave of gold well met.
Heabottel fled from *Iedburgh* Castle wight,

Towards

7 Chap. 4. *Of Sir William Wallace.* 177

owards *England*, there *Setoun* met him right,
With fourty men *Christel* in bargan bade,
gainst seven score, and meikle mastery made:
Slew the Captain, and many cruel man,
All great riches in that journey he wan.
Guthould and gold, as they should pass away,
The which before they kepted many a day.
Edinburgh he took, and *Ruthmen* leaved he,
That *Wallace* will their Captain for to be.
Old *Setoun* then to *Lowthean* made repare,
In this story ye may hear of him mair:
And into *Bruce*, who liketh for to read,
He was with him in many cruel deed.
Good *Wallace* then full sadly can devise,
To rule the Land, with worthy men and wise.
Captains he made, and Sheriffs that were good,
Part of his kin, and of other true blood.
His dear Cousin in *Edinburgh* ordained he,
The true *Crawford*, that ay was full worthie,
Keeper at it with noble men at wage,
That *Manwell* then he had good heritage.
Scotland was free, that long in bail had been,
That *Wallace* it wan from our enemies keen:
Great Governour of *Scotland* he could reign,
Waiting a time to get his righteous King;
From *Englishmen* that held him in bandoun,
That wrongfully from his own righteous Crown.
The end of the Seventh Book.



THE EIGHT BOOK.

CHAP. I.

How Wallace put Corspatrick out of Scotland.

FIve moneths thus *Scotland* stood in good re-
 A counsel cry'd, them thocht it was the be-
 In *Saint Iohnstoun*, where it shold holden
 Assembled Clerk, Barron, and Burgeis free :
 But *Corspatrick* would not come at their call,
 Bade in *Dumbar*, and made scorn of them all.
 They spake of him feil Lords of that Parliament.
 Then *Wallace* said : Will ye hereto consent,
 Forgive him free all things that is by past,
 So he will come, and grant he hath trespass,
 From this time forth keep lawty to our Crown :
 They granted thereto, Clerk, Burgeis and Barro
 With whole consent their writing to him send,
 Right lowly thus they them to him commend,
 Besought him fair, as one then of the Land,
 To come and take some Governance in hand.
 Lightly he leugh, in scorn as it had been,
 And said, He had such messige seldom seen,
 That *Wallace* now as Governour should reign :
 Here is great fault of a good Prince or King.
 That King of *Kyle* I cannot understand,
 Of him I held never a fur of land : (whe
 That bauchler trows, for Fortune shoves
 Therewith to last, it shall not long be well :
 But to you Lords, and ye will understand,
 Make you wise, Iought to make no band :

Als free I am in this Region to reign,
 Lord of mine own, as ever was Prince or King :
 In *England* als great part of Land I have,
 Min-rent thereof will no man of me crave.
 What will ye more ? I warn you, I am free,
 For your summons, ye get no more of me.
 To *Saint Iohnstoun* this writ he sent again,
 Before the Lords, was manifest in plain.
 When *Wallace* heard the Earl such answer makes,
 A great heat through courage then he takes :
 For he wist well there could be but one King
 Of this Region at once for to reign.
 A King of *Kyle*, for that he called *Wallace* :
 Lords, he said, this is an uncouth case :
 Be he suffered, we are worse then we was.
 Thus rose he up, and made him for to pass :
 God hath us tholed to do so for the lave,
 On life or death, in faith, we shal him have :
 Or gar him grant whom he holds for his Lord,
 Or else were shame in story to record.
 I vow to God, with ease he shall not be
 Into this Realm, but one of us shal die :
 Lets then he come, and know his righteous King,
 In this Region well both we shal not reign :
 His lightly scorn he shal repent full sore,
 But power fail, or I shall end therefore.
 Since in this earth is ordained me no rest,
 Now God be judge, the right he knoweth best.
 At that counsel he longer carried nought,
 With his two hundred from *S. Iohnstoun* he sought,
 To the counsel made instance ere he yeed,
 They should contain, and of him have no dread.

I am but one, and for good cause I ga,
Toward *Kinghorn* the gainest way they ta :
Upon the moir over *Forth*, South they past :
On his voyage, he halted wonder fast.
Robert Lawder at *Mussetburgh* met *Wallace* :
From *Englishmen* hee kepted well his place.
Cold none him treat, Knight, Squyer, nor yet Lord
With King *Edward* for to be at concord.
On Earl *Patrick* to pass he was full glad.
Some said before, the *Basse* he would have had.
Good men came als with *Christel* of *Setoun*,
Then *VWallace* was four hundred of renown.
A Squyer *Lyle* that well the Country knew,
With twenty men to *Wallace* could persue,
Beside *Lyntown*, and to them told he than,
That Earl *Patrick* with many likely man,
At *Cokburns-path* he had his gathering made,
And to *Dumbar* would come withoutten bade.
Then *Lawder* said: It were the best, thinks me,
Faster to pass in *Dumbar* ere he be.
Wallace answered: We may at leasure ryde,
With yon power he thinks bargane to byde.
And of one thing ye shall well understand,
An hardier Lord is not within our Land.
Might he be made true steadfast to our King;
By wit and force he can do meikle thing :
But wilfully he likes to tyne himself.
Thus rode they forth, and would no longer dwe
By east *Dumbar*, where men them told in case,
How Earl *Patrick* was warned of *Wallace* :
Near *Innerweik* choosed a field at wail,
With nine hundred of like!y men but fail.

our hundred was with *Wallace* in the right,
 and they anone approached in their sight:
 great fault was there of good treaty between,
 to make concord, and that full soon was seen,
 without rehearse of action in that ride,
 in either part together fast they ride,
 the flour was strong, and wonder chevalrous,
 continued long with deeds perillous.
 many there died of cruel *Scots* blood.
 If this treaty the matter is not good,
 therefore I cease to tell the destruction:
 it was and all of one Nation.
 But *Earl Patrick*, the field left at the last,
 fight few with him to *Cokburns-path* there past:
 grieved sore that his men thus were tint,
Wallace returned, and would no longer stint,
 toward *Dumbar*, where sooth-fast men him told,
 to purveyance was left into that hold,
 for men of fence, all had been with their Lord.
 Then *Wallace* heard the sikker true record,
Dumbar he took all whole at his bandoun,
 gave it to keep to *Christel* of *Setoun*,
 who stuffed it with men and good victual.
 Upon the morn *Wallace* that would not fail,
 with three hundred to *Cokburns-path* he sought;
Patrick fled, for bide him would he nought;
 on to the Park *Wallace* a range hath set,
 to *Bank-l. wood* *Corispatrik* fled but let:
 and out of it to *Norhame* passed he.
 Then *Wallace* saw it might no better be,
 to *Caldstrem* rode, and lodged him on *Tweed*;
Patrick then in all haste can him speed,

And

And passed by ere *Wallace* power rose,
Without resting to *Ettrick* Forest goes.
Wallace followed, but he would not assail,
A range to make, as then it might not vail :
Over few he had, the strength was thick and strong
Twelve myles of breadth, and thereto twice as long
Into *Cokholme* *Earl Patrick* bode at rest.
For more power *Wallace* past in the west.
Earl Patrick then him graithed hastily :
In *England* past to get him there supply :
Out through the land right earnestly could pass,
To *Anthony Beik* that Lord of *Durham* was.
Wallace put him out of *Glasgow* before,
And slew *Perse*, their malice was the more.
And Bishop *Beik* gart soon great power rife,
Northumberland upon an awfull wise.
They ordained *Bruce* in *Scotland* for to pass,
To win his own, but evil deceived he was :
They gart him trow that *Wallace* was rebel,
And thought to take the Kingrick to himsel :
For false they were, and ever yet hath been.
Lawty and truth was ever in *Wallace* seen.
To fend their right was all he took in hand,
And thought to bring *Bruce* free unto his land.
Of this matter as now I tarry nought.
With strong power *Sutherland* together sought,
From *Oyis* water assembled whole in *Tweed*,
The land Host was thirty thousand indeed :
Off *Thames* mouth sent ships by the sea,
To keep *Dumbar* that none should them supplie
Earl Patrick past with twenty thousand but less,
Before *Dumbar* a stalward sledge he set.

the Bishop Beik and Robert Bruce bade stil,
 With ten thousand in Norham at their wil.
 Wallace by this that fast was labourand,
 Lowthian came with good men five thousand,
 Right wel beseen into their armour bright,
 Thought to rescue the Setoun bold and wight.
 Under Yester that first night lodged he,
 Day came to him with a good Chevalrie;
 In Down Forrest all that time he had been,
 He had the coming of the Sutheron seen.
 With fifty he had of wise men into wear,
 They told Wallace of Patrick's great effear.
 Hay said: Forsooth and ye might him overlet,
 Power again right soon he might not get:
 My counsel is, that ye give him battel.
 He thanked them of comfort and counsel,
 And said: Friend Hay, in this cause that I wend,
 So that we win, I reke not for to end:
 Right sooth it is that once we must die,
 Into the right, who should in terrour be?
 Earl Patrick there a messenger gart pass,
 Told Anthony that Wallace coming was.
 Of these tydings the Bishop was full glad.
 Amends of him full fain he would have had:
 But more prolong throgh Lammer-mure they rade,
 Near the Spot-mure in bushment still he bade,
 Where Earl Patrick then ordained for to be.
 Wallace of Beik unwarned then was he:
 Yet he before was not hasty indeed,
 But then he put both him and his in dread.
 Upon swift horse scourious rode between,
 The coming then of Earl Patrick hath seen:

The house he left, and to the Mure is gane,
A plain field with his Host hath he tane.
Good *Setoun* then ished with few meinzie:
Part of his men into *Dumbar* left he,
To *Wallace* rode, was on the righteous side,
In good array to *Spots-mure* they ride.
The *Scots* dread the Earl so many was,
Twenty thousand against so few to passe.
But *Iop* perceived, he bade *Wallace* should byde
Tyne not your men, but to some strength ye ride
And I shall passe to get you power mair:
These are over good thus lightly for to wair,
Then *Wallace* laid, In truth I shall not flee,
For four of his, ay one while I may be:
We are over near such purpose for to take,
A dangerous chase they might upon us make:
Here is twenty with this power this day,
Would him assay. suppose I were away:
Many they are, for Gods sake be we strong,
Yon *Sutherland* folk in stour will not bide long.

CHAP. II. *How Corispatrik brought in Scotland Bishop Beik, and Robert the Bruce: and how Wallace gave them battel, and put them out of Scotland.*

THe brim battel braithly on either side,
Great rierd there rose over al wher that they
The fore sembly when they together met, (ride
Feil strais there they sadly on either set:
Pranzeing speirs through plats preassed fast,
Many off horse down to the ground they cast:
Saddles they teim off horse, but masters there,
Of the South-side five thousand down they bare.

Good

Good *Wallace* Host the foremost cumbred so,
 That the rest was in will away to go :
 Earl *Patrick* bode so cruel of intent,
 His whole Host of him took hardiment:
 Against *Wallace* in many flour was he :
Wallace knew well that his men would not flee,
 Nor no power that living was on live,
 While they on bail might be one ay for five :
 That great strife many were handled hair,
 He feil dints, the cruel hard debate :
 He feirs striking made many grievous wound,
 On the earth the blood made to abound.
Wallace Host into a compasse bade,
 There they turned, ful great slaughter they made
Wallace and *Graham*, with *Ramsay* full worthy,
 The bold *Setoun*, and *Richard* of *Lundy*,
 And *Adam* als of *Richartoun*,
 With *Hay* and *Lyle* with good men of renown :
Myd, *Barclay*, *Baird*, and *Lawder* that was wight,
 All *Englishmen* derfly to death they dight.
 Earl *Patrick* full fiercely fought again,
 Though his own hand many he put to pain :
 His men on him throng foreward into thro.
 He through the Host feil floss to and fro.
 The *Englishmen* began plainly to flee,
 When Bishop *Beik* full sudnenly they see :
 And *Robert Bruce*, contrair his native men
Wallace was wo, fra time he could him ken :
Bruces deeds he was agrieved mair
 Than all the lave that day that sembled there.
 The great bushment at once then brake on breed,
 A thousand whole that doughty were indeed :

The

The fliers then with Earl *Patrick* relieved,
They fought again, where many were mischieve
When *Wallace* saw the bushment broken was,
Out of the field on horse he thought to pass :
But he saw well his Host sound in their weed :
He thought to fray the formost ere he yeed.
The new come Host about him sembled there,
On either side with straiks sad and sair.
The worthy *Scots* so fiercely fought again,
Of *Antonies* men full many have they slain :
But that Tyrant so used was in wear,
On *VWallace* Host he did full meikle dear :
And the bold *Bruce*, so cruelly wrought he,
Through strength of hand feil *Scots* gart he die
To resist *Bruce*, *VWallace* he preassed fast,
But *Englishmen* so thick between them past :
And Earl *Patrick* in all the haste he mought,
Throughout the stour to *VWallace* soon he song
On the pelant a fellon straik him gave,
Carved the plate, with his sharp grounded glaive
Through all the stuff, and wounded him some de
But *VWallace* thought he should be venged wel
Followed on him, and a straik etched fast :
But one *Maitland* rekless between them past :
Upon the head good *Wallace* hath him tane,
Through head and brain in sunder strake the ba
Dead to the ground at that straik he him drave,
Thus *VWallace* was deslevered from the lave
Of his goodmen, among them him alone,
About him sought feil enemies many one.
Stricked his horse, to ground behoved to light,
To fend himself, as wisely as he might,

e worthy *Scots* that might no longer bide,
 th heavy hearts out of the field they ride,
 th them in fear they weened *Wallace* had been:
 foot he was amongst his enemies keen:
 od rowm he made about him into breed,
 th his good sword that helped him in need:
 as none so strong that got of him a straik,
 er again made never the *Scots* wraik.
 el *Patrick* then that had great craft in wear,
 th spears ordain'd good *Wallace* down to bear:
 ew they took were whole into the field,
 him they yeed, thocht he should have no beild,
 either side fast prunzeing at his gear:
 hewed off heads, and wisely could him wear.
 e worthy *Scots* of this then little wist, (mist:
 ight to good *Graham* when they their chiftain
 nder, and *Lyle*, and *Hay*, that were so wight,
 d bold *Ramsay*, which was a worthy Knight:
 ndie and *Boyd*, and *Christel* of *Setoun*,
 th five hundred that were in bargane bown,
 n to rescue, rudely in they rade,
 out *Wallace* a large rowm they made.
 e Bishop *Beik* was braithly born to eird:
 that rescue there was a fellon rierd.
 e he got up, feil *Sutheron* they flew,
 t of the preasse *Wallace* they can rescue,
 on horsed him upon a courser wight,
 ward a strength they rade in all their might;
 ight wisely fled, rescuing many man.
 e Earl *Patrick* to stuff the chase began,
 t, the fliers there little harm they wrought,
 od *Wallace* folk away together sought.

Those

Those five hundred the which I spake of air,
So awfully abandoned them and fair:
No follower durst from his fellow ga,
The good sliers such turning in they ma:
Four thousand whole had tane the strength before
Of *Wallace* Host, his comfort was the more,
Of *Glastaden* that Forreist thought to hold.
Earl *Patrick* turned, though he were never so bold
Again to *Beik*, when scaped was *Wallace*,
Cursing Fortune of his mischanceful case.
The field he wan, and seven thousand were lost
Dead on that day, for all the Bishops boast,
Of *Wallace* men five hundred slain I guess,
But no Chiftain, his mourning was the less.
Near even it was, but *Beik* would not abide,
In *Lammer-mure* they turned in that tide.
Their lodging where he thought to avail,
For well they trowed the *Scots* would assail,
Upon the field, where they gave battel last,
The Countrey-men to *Wallace* gathered fast.
Of *Edinburgh* with *Crawford* that was wight,
Four hundred came into their armour bright:
To *Wallace* rode, by his lodging was tane.
Of *Tevendale* came good men many ane.
Out of *Fedburgh* with *Ruthwen* at that tide,
Together sought from many diverse side.
Sir *William* then that Lord was of *Dowglas*,
With him four score that night came to *Wallace*.
Twenty hundred of new men met that night,
Upon their foes to venge them at their might.
At the first field these good men had not been.
Wallace watches their adversaries hath seen,

to what wise they had their lodging made.
 Wallace bowed after supper but bade,
 Lammer-mure they passed hastily,
 on to array yeed his good Chevalry.
 Wallace them made in two parts to be,
 John the Graham and Setoun ordained he,
 powder and Hay, with three thousand to ride,
 himself the rest took wisely for to guide.
 With him Lundie, both Ramsay and Douglas,
 Arklay and Boyd, and good Adam Wallace.
 This the day approached wonder near,
 and bright Titan in presence can appear :
 the Scottish Host soon sembled into sight
 of their enemies, they were not ready dight:
 out of array feil of the Sutheron was :
 ght awfully Wallace can on them pass.
 At this entry the Scots so well them bare,
 il of their foes to death were brittined there.
 reckless they rose, and many fled away :
 me on the ground were smored where they lay:
 eat noise and cry was raised them among :
 ood Graham came, that stalwart was and strong.
 Wallace men were well together met,
 in the South part so awfully they set.
 contrair them the frayed folk might not stand,
 once there fled of Sutheron ten thousand.
 e worthy Scots wrought upon such a wise,
 o said, that they were worthy for to prise.
 t Bishop Beik, that fellon Tyrant strong,
 de in the stour right awfully and long.
 Knight Skelton, that cruel was and keen,
 fore him stood into his armour sheen,

To fend his Lord, full worthily he wrought :
Lundie him saw, and sadly to him sought :
With his good sword an ackward straik him gave,
Through pefan stuff his craig in funder drave :
Whereof the rest were stonifht in that stead.
The bold *Skelton* of *Lundies* hand was dead.
Then fled they all, and might no longer bide,
Patrick and *Beik* away with *Bruce* they ride:
Five thousand held into a ftop away,
To *Norham* house in all the hafte they may.
Our men followed that were worthy and wight
Many fliers to death they derfly dight.
These three Lords to the Castle they fought,
Ful feil they lofed that were from *England* brocht
At this journey twenty thousand they tint,
Drowned and flain with fpears and fwords dint.
The *Scots* at *Tweed* they hafted them fo faft,
Feil *Sutheron* men to wrong foords they paf.
Wallace returned, in *Norham* when they were,
For worthy *Bruce* his heart was wonder fair.
He had rather have had him at his large,
Free of our Crown, then of fine gold to charge
More then in *Troy* was when the *Greeks* it wan.
Wallace pafled with many awfull man,
Over *Patrick's* land, and wafled wonder faft :
Took out great goods, and places down can caft.
His fteads twelve, that *Methamis* were call'd,
Wallace gart break thofe buirly buildings bald :
Both in the *Mers*, and alfo *Lomthian*,
Except *Dumbar*, ftanding he leaved nane.
To *Edinburgh* then upon the eighth day,
Upon the morn *Wallace* without delay

to Perth past where a counsel was set,
 to the Barrons he shewed withoutten let,
 how his great vow right well eschewed was :
 to a Master he gart Earl Patrick passe,
 because he said of Scotland he held nought :
 to King Edward to get supply he sought :
 the Lords were blyth, & welcomed well Wallace,
 thanking great God of his fair happy case.
 Wallace took state to govern all Scotland,
 the barnage whole made him an open band :
 then dealt the Land to good men him about.
 for Scotlands right had set their lives in doubt.
 Aintown he gave to Lawder in his wage,
 the Knight Wallange ought it in heritage.
 then Birgem-crook he gave Lyle that was wight,
 to Scrymger als full good reward he dight :
 then Wallace-town, and other lands theretill,
 to worthy men he dealt with noble will.
 to his own kin no heritage gave he,
 at offices, that every man might see :
 for covetice there could no man him blame,
 he bade reward, while the king should come hame;
 full he did, he thought to bide the Law,
 before his King and Master when he saw.
 Scotland was blyth, in dolor had been lang,
 every part to good labour they gang.

CHAP. III. How Wallace past into England,
 and remained there three quarters of a year,
 and came home again without battel.

BY this the time of October was past,
 November near approached wonder fast :

Tydings there came King *Edward* grieved was,
With his power in *Scotland* thought to pass :
For Earl *Patrick* had given such counsel.
Wallace got wit, andsembled power hail,
Fourty thousand in *Rosline-mure* they met:
Lords, he said, this is King *Edwards* set,
In contrair right to seek us in our Land :
I heght to God, and to you, by mine hand,
I shall him meet for all his great barnage,
Within *England*, to send our heritage.
His false desire shall on himself be seen.
He shall us find in contrair of his een.
Since he with wrong hath ridden this Region,
We shall now pass in contrair of his Crown.
I will not bid great Lords with us to fare,
For mine intent plainly I will declare :
Our purpose is either to win or die :
Who yeelds to him, shall never ransomed be.
The Barons then him answered worthily,
And said : They would pass with their Cheval
Himself and *Iop* provided that menzie,
Twenty thousand of wailed men took he :
Harness and horte he gart among them wail,
Weapons anew that might them best avail :
Graithed these men, that cruel were and keen,
Better in war in world could not be seen :
He bade the rest in labour for to byde.
In good array from *Rosline-mure* they ryde :
In their muster, good *Wallace* could them ask,
What needeth more in one power to pass ?
All of one will, as I trow, set are we,
In plain battel cannot discomfist be :

our Realm is poor, wasted with *Sutherland* bloods,
 and win on them gold and other good.
 The Host inclined all with humble will,
 and said: They should his bidding then fulfil.
Malcome with his *Lennox* men is gone,
 at name of rule in him he would have none:
Wallace him knew a Lord that was worthy,
 his counsel he wrought full stedfastly:
 longer he was if he had battel seen,
 or he before had in good journeys been.
 A man of strength that hath good wit withall,
 whose whole Region may comfort at his call.
 Mainly *Hector* wrought into his wear,
 against an hundred counted was his spear:
 that that was not through his strength only,
 but rule be led of noble Chevalry.
 These examples were worthy for token.
 For I leave, and speak forth of our men.
 Knight *Campbell* made him to that voyage;
Lochow chief, that was his heritage:
 good *Ramsay* forth to that journey went:
John the Graham foreward in his intent.
Wallace cousin, *Adam*, full worthy was,
Robert Boyd, forth blythly can they pass.
Auchinleck, and *Richard of Lundie*,
Der and *Hay*, and *Setoun* full worthy.

His Royal Host but resting forth they rode,
 To *Broxas* field, and there a while they bode:
Wallace took with him fourty but lies,
Forburgh gate rode soon ere they would cease
For marvelled if it should be *Wallace*,

Without assurance came to persue that place,
Of sir *Ralph Gray* soon presence could he ask,
And warned him thus, further ere he would pass
Our purpose is in *England* for to ryde,
No time we have of liding for to byde :
Take heed and hear of our coming again,
Gve over this house, send me the keyes in plain
This I command, before this witness large,
If thou wilt not, remain with all the charge :
But this be done, of force and I take thee,
Over the wall thou shalt be hanged bie.
With that he turned, and all his Host can wend
This like command to *Barwick* soon he send,
With good *Ramsay* that was a worthy Knight.
The Host but more right awfully he dight.
Began at *Tweed*, and spared nought they fand,
But burnt by force all whole *Northumberland*,
All *Durham* town they burnt up in a gleid,
Abbeies they spared and Kirks where they yee
To *York* they rode, but bode ere they would be
To burn and slay of them, he thought no sin :
No sin they thought the same to let us feel.
But *VWilliam Wallace* quite our quarrel well :
Forts they wan, and smal Castles cast down,
With asper weapons payed their ransom.
Of prisoners they liked not to keep : (we
Whom they overtook, they made their friends
No *Sutheron* saved for all their great riches,
All such treachery he called wretchedness.
Unto the gates and suburbs of the town,
Braithly they burnt, & brake their buildings do
At the wals assayed fifteen dayes,

While King *Edward* sent to them in this wise,
 Knight, a Clerk, and a Squyer of peace.
 And prayed them from burning for to cease,
 And heght battel ere fifteen dayes should passe,
 Soverance so long if he liked to ask.
 And als he spiered: Why *Wallace* took on hand,
 The fellon strife in defence of *Scotland*?
 And said: He marveiled in his wits for thy,
 Against *England* was of so great party.
 Since ye have made so meikle of *Scotland* free,
 Were good time for to let malice be.
Wallace hath heard the message say their will,
 With manly voice right thus he said them till:
 We may know well that right enough we have,
 This soverance I covet not to crave:
 Because I am a native *Scots* man,
 As my debt to do all that I can,
 To send this Kingrick out of dangering,
 His desire we will grant him something.
 Our Host shal cease for ought that may betyde,
 These fourty dayes bargan to abyde,
 And shal do nought, lest then it move in you,
 This respite my self could never trow.
 King *Edwards* writ under his seal they gave,
 Fourty dayes that they should battel have.
Wallace then gave credence to their King,
 His leave they took, then passed but resting,
 Told him whole how *Wallace* let him feel,
 Their soverance he cared not a deal.
 He ruled men so awful in effeir,
 Not Christen, as he leads into wear.
 King answered, and said: It should be kend,

It comes of wit, enemies to commend :
They are to dread right greatly in certain,
Sadly they think of harms that they have tane.
Leave I them thus at Counsel with their King,
And of the *Scots* again to speak some thing.

W *Allace* tranoynted upon the second day,
From *York* they pals upon a good array
North-west they went, in battel busked bown,
Their lodging they took beside *Northallartown*,
And cryed his peace their Markets for to stand,
Those fourty dayes for people of *England*.
Who that liked any victual to sell,
Of all their store was meikle for to tell.
Sir Ralph Rymount Captain of *Miltown* was,
With great power by night ordained to pass,
On *VWallace* Host to make some jeopardie.
Feil *Scots* men that dwelt in that Countrie,
Wist of this thing, and gathered to *VWallace* :
They made him wise of all this felon case.
Good *Lundie* then to him he called there,
And *Flew* the *Hay* of *Lochartquhart* was air,
With three thousand that worthily was wroug
Then privatly on from the Host they sought ;
The men he took that came to him of new,
Guides to be, for they the Countrey knew :
The Host they made in good quiet to be,
A space from them he busked privatlie :
Sir Ralph Rymount with seven thousand came in
Of *Wallace* Host a jeopardie did begin :
The Bushment brake ere they the Host came ne
The *Sutherland* men the worthy *Scots* can fear,

Three thousand whole were braithly brought to
 ourrie they soght, & sikerly have found. (ground
 Sir *Ralph Rymount* was sticked on a spear,
 Three thousand slain that worthy were in wear.
 No *Sutherland* wist when their Chiftain was slain,
 To *Miltown* fast they fled in all their main :
Wallace followed fast with his Chevalry,
 Amongst *Sutherland* they entred suddenly,
 Scots and *English* into the town at once,
Sutherland men shot, and braithly cast down stones:
 Of their own men right feil then have they slain,
 The Scots about that were of meikle main,
 Up greiffes ran, and seized all the Town,
 Deifly to dead the *Sutherland* dang they down.
Wallace there hath founden great riches,
 Jewels and gold, weapons and harness:
 Spoiled the Town of wine and of vittail,
 To his Host sent with carriage of great vail,
 Three dayes still within the Town he bade,
 Then broke down work that worthily was made :
 Wives and hairns they put out of the Town,
 No man he saved that was of that nation.
 When Scots had tane and tursed their desire,
 Walls they broke, and set the rest on fire :
 The timber work they burnt up all in plain,
 On the fourth day to the Host rode again.
 Part cast a dyke that might some strengthening be,
 To keep the Host from sudden jeopardie.
 Then *Englishmen* vvas right graithly agast,
 From North and South, unto the King they past :
 At *Pumfret* lay, and held a Parliament :
 To give battel the Lords vould not consent,

But *Wallace* were of *Scotland* crowned King.
Their Counsell fand it was a perillous thing,
For though they wan, they wan but as they were
And if they tinn, lost *England* evermair,
In case it were put in the *Scots* hand :
And this decreit their wit amongst them fand,
If *Wallace* would upon him take the Crown,
To give battel they should be ready boun.
The samine Message to him they sent again,
And their intent they told to him in plain.
Wallace them charged from his presence absent,
His Counsell called, and showed them his intent
He and his men desired battel to have,
By any wayes of *England* over the lave :
Himself said first : that were an over hie thing,
Against my faith, to reave my righteous King.
I am his own born native of *Scotland*.
To wear the Crown I will not take in hand,
To fend my Realm it is my debt by skil,
Let God above reward me as he wil.
Some bade *Wallace* upon him take the Crown :
Wise men said : Nay, it were derision,
To Crown him King but voice of Parliament,
For they wist not if *Scotland* would consent.
Other some said : It was the wrongous place.
Thus deemed they of many diverse case,
The Knight *Campbell* of wit a worthy man,
As I said aie, with them was present than,
Heard, and answered, when many said their will
This were the best, and *Wallace* grant theretill,
To crown him King solemnly for a day,
To get an end of all our long delay,

The good Earl *Malcome* said: That *Wallace* might
 as for one day, in fence of *Scotlands* right,
 Though he refused it lastingly to bear,
 Receive the Crown as into fare of wear.
 The people all to him gave their consent:
Malcome of old was Lord of Parliament.
 Yet *Wallace* choled, and let them say their wil,
 When they had deemed by many diverse skil.
 In his own minde he abhorred this thing.
 The commons cryed Make *Wallace* crowned King
 Then sembled he, and said: It should not be,
 At terms short, ye get no more of me.
 Under colour our answer we must make,
 But such a thing I wil not on me take:
 Wil you suffer to say that it was swa,
 It were a scorn the Crown on me to ta:
 They would not let the message of *England*
 Come them amonght, or they should understand.
 Two Knights past to the message again,
 Made them to trow *Wallace* was crowned in plain
 Gave them trust wel that it was soothfast thing:
 Delivered thus, they passed to their King:
 To *Pumfret* went, and told that they had seen,
Wallace crowned, whereof they Lords were teen,
 In barret wex in Parliament where they stood,
 Then said they all: These tydings are not good:
 He did so well in all his time before,
 And now their King, he will do meikle more.
 A fortunate man, nothing goes him again,
 And we give battel, we shal repent with pain.
 Another said; And battel will he have,
 Or stroy our Land, no treason may us save;

In his conquest, since first he couth begin,
He selleth not, but takes that he may win :
For *Englishmen* he sets no doom but dead :
Pryce or pennies may make us no remead.
And *Woodstock* sayes ; Ye work not as the wise
If that ye take the anture of surprise :
Forthough we win all that are in *England*,
The rest are strong against us for to stand.
Be *Wallace* safe, other they count but smal,
For that, me think, it were the best of all,
To keep our strengths, Castles, and walled tow
So we shall fend the folk of this Region :
Though North be burnt, better of soverance to be
Then set all *England* in a jeopardie.
They granted all as *Woodstock* can them saye.
And thus they put the battel in delay,
And cast them whole for other governance,
Against *Wallace* to work some ordinance.
Thus *Wallace* hath in plain discomfist hail,
Against King *Edward* all his whole battel :
For through falshood and his subtilty,
They thought he should for great necessity,
And fault of food, to steal out of the land.
Then this deceit their wit amongst them fand,
They gart the King cry all their Markets down,
From *Trent* to *Tweed*, in through fair & free tow
That in the bounds no man should victual lead,
Such stuff and wine, under the pain of dead.
The same decreit they gave in Parliament.
Of *Scots* forth to speak is mine intent.
Wallace lay still while forty days were gone,
Abyding them, but appearance saw none,

Battel

steel to have, as their promise was made :
 gart again display his Banner brade :
 proved *Edward* right greatly of this thing,
 uchled his seal, blew out on this false King,
 re-crying turned back, and yeed his gate.
 n *Wallace* made full many biggings hate.
 ey raised fire, burnt up *Northallartown*,
 ain through *York-shire* boldly made them bown
 stroyed the Land as far as ever they ride,
 ven miles about they burnt on every side.
 d wrought the *Sutheron* many working wound
 laces spilt, great towers can confound.
 idows weeped with sorrow in their song,
 idens mourned with great meaning among,
 ey spared none, but women and the Kirk :
 e worthy *Scots* of labour would not irk.
 ve to *Abbeys* right largely of their good.
 o all *Kirk-men* they did nothing but good.
 e temporal land they spoiled at their will,
 ood gardens gay, and great orchards they spill,
 o *York* they went these war-men of renown,
 iedge set they right sadly to the Town.
 r great defence they garnisht them within,
 fell assault without they can begin.

CHAP. IV. The Siedge of York.

Divided the Host in four parts about,
 with watches fell, that no man should ish out:
 out the town, upon the south-port side,
 ere *Wallace* and good *Lundie* did abide,
 l *Malcome* then at the west-gate abade,
 ith him the *Boyd* that good journeys had made.

The Knight *Campbell* of *Lochow* that was Lord
At the north-gate, and *Ramsay* made them for
Sir *John* the *Graham*, that worthy was in wear,
Auchinleck, *Crawford*, with full manly effect
At the East-port boldly they think to bide.
A thousand Archers upon the *Scots* side,
Dissevered them amongst the four party.
Five thousand bow-men in the town for thy,
Within the wals arrayed them full right,
Twelve thousand mo, that seemly was to fight
Then *Wallace* said: And yond were on a plain,
In field to fight, me thinks we should be fain.
Then salziet they right fast on every side,
The worthy *Scots* that boldly durst abide,
With speir and shield, for guns they had none,
Within the dykes they gart feil *Sutherland* grone
Arrows they shot right fierce as any fire,
Out over the wals, that flamed in great yre:
Through birnish bright, with heeds of fine steel.
The *Sutherland* blood of freindship none they fee
Over shining harness sought the blood so shee
The *Englishmen* that cruel were and keen,
Keeped their town, and fended them full fast,
Faggats of fire amongst the Host they cast,
With pick and tar of feil shewes they sent:
Many were hurt ere they from the wals went.
Stones of spring-holds they did cast out fast,
And gads of yron, made many groom agast:
But nevertheless the *Scots* that were without,
The town full oft they set into great doubt.
Their bulwark burnt right brimly of the town,
Their barmkin wan, and great garrers cast down

Thus layled they on each side with great might,
 The day was gone, and coming was the night.
 The weary Host then drew them from the town,
 Set out watches, for resting made them boun.
 Washed wounds with wine, of the that were unsound
 For none was dead, of great mirth they abound.
 Feil men were hurt, but no mourning they made,
 Confirmed the sledge, and stedfastly abade.
 When that the Sun on morrow rose up bright,
 Before the Chiftains assembled they full right,
 And said, Amends of the town they should take,
 For all the fence that the *Sutheron* might make.
 Arrayed again, as they began before,
 About the Town they assayed wonder sore,
 With fellon shot out over the walls full sheen:
 Feil *Englisshmen* that cruel were and keen,
 With shot were slain, for all their targets strange
 Burstid helms, many to ground they dang.
 Brime burning fire they cast at every gate,
 The entries thus in peril oft they set.
 The defenders were of full great defence,
 Keaped the town through strength and violence
 All thus the day they drave unto the night,
 To pavilions bowned many weary wight:
 All irk of war, the Town was strong to win,
 Of artailzie, and noble men within.
 When that they trowed the *Scots* were at rest,
 For jeopardie the *Englisshmen* them cast.
 Sir *John Morton* was known worthy and wight,
 Sir *William Les* then gaithed them that night,
 With five thousand well garnisht and savage,
 Upon the *Scots* they thought to make skirmage,
 And

And at the gate ished out hastily;
On Earl *Malcome*, and his good Chevalry.
To check the watch, *Wallace* and ten hath been
Ryding about, and hath their coming seen:
He gart one blow was in his company,
The ready men arrayed them hastily:
Feil of the *Scots* ilk night in harness bade,
By ordinance, for they such rule had made:
With short advice together then they went
Upon their foes, where feil *Sutherland* were shent
Wallace knew well the Earl too hasty was,
For that he sped him in the preas to pass.
A sword of war into his hand he bare,
The first he hit, the craig in sunder share.
Another atward upon the face took he,
Both nose and front on the field gart he flee.
The hardy Earl before his men out past
Into the field, where feil were fighting fast.
A shearing sword he bare drawn in his hand;
The first was fey that he before him fand.
When *Wallace* was and he together set,
There lasted none against them that they met;
But either dead or fled away them fra:
By this the Host was in a good array:
With the great scry assembled them about;
Then stood the *Sutherland* in a fellon doubt.
Wallace knew well the *Englishmen* would flee,
For thy he thrust in the thickest to be,
Hewing full fast on whomsoever he sought;
Against his dint fine steel availed nought.
Wallace of hand, since *Arbuthnot*, had no mark;
Whom he hit right, wasy dead at one straik.

That

That was well know in many places where,
 Whom *Wallace* hit, they deired *Scots* no mair :
 As all his men did cruelly and well,
 That came to straits, that might the *Sutheron* feel.
 The *Englishmen* fled, and left the field plainly,
 The worthy *Scots* wrought there so hardily,
 Sir *John Morton* in that place he was dead,
 And twelve hundred, but any more remead.
 Thus many were left into the field and slain,
 The rest returned into the town again :
 Andrewed full sore that ever they forth could found
 Amongst them was full many working wound,
 The Host again each one to their ward rade,
 Commanded watch, and no more noile made,
 But rested still, while that the bright day dew,
 Again began the town to sailzie new.
 On this day wrought with full great worthiness,
 Failed sore by wit and hardiness.
 The Hosts victual waxed scant, and failed fast,
 Thus lay they there while diverse dayes were past :
 The land wasted, and meat none was to win,
 At that wilt not the folk that was therein :
 They dread full sore for their own Vennison.
 For soverance prayed the power of the town,
 To speak with *Wallace* then they desired fast,
 And he appeared, and speared, what they askt :
 The Maior answered : We would pay you ransoun,
 To pass away and dear no more the town.
 Great shame it were that we should yeelden be,
 And towns holden of lesse power then we :
 We may not win us, long though that ye bide,
 We shall give gold, and ye will from us ride.

We may give battel, durst we for our King.
Since he hath left it, were over high a thing
To us to do, without his ordinance,
This town of him we hold in governancé.
Wallace answered, Of your gold reck we nought
It is for battel that we hither sought:
We had rather have battel of *England*,
Then all the gold that good King *Arthur* fand
On Mount *Michel* when he the Gyant slew.
Gold may be gone, but worship ay is new:
The King promis'd that we should battel have,
His write thereto under his seal they gave.
Letter nor band ye see may not avail
Us for this time, to get of him battail:
Me think we should on his men wroken be:
Upon our kin many great wrongs wrought he.
His devil-like deed he wrought into *Scotland*,
The Major said, Sir, right ye thus understand:
We have no charge what our King gars us do,
But in this kind we shall be bound you to:
Some part of Gold to give you with good will,
And nought after to wait you with none ill,
By no kin mean the power of this town,
But if our King make him to battel bowne.
Into the Host was many worthy man,
With *Wallace* mo, nor now reckon I can.
Better it was, for at his will they wrought,
Though he was best, yet other lake we nought.
All served thanks to *Scotland* evermair,
For manlike wit the which they shewed there.
The whole Chancel thus deemed there among,
The town to siede they thought it was too strong.

And not a way to win it by no flight :
 The Counsel found it was the best they might,
 Some gold to take, since that we get no mair,
 Then forth away into their voyage fare.
 Then *Wallace* said, My self will not consent,
 But if this town make us this plain consent,
 Take our Banner, and set it on the wall,
 For our power this Realm hath ridden all,
 Weelden to be, when we think them to take,
 In *England* long residence if we make.
 This answer soon they sent to the Major,
 And they consented, the remnant that was there :
 The Banner took, and set it on the town,
 To *Scotland* was heght honour and renown,
 The Banner there from eight hours unto noon.
 Their finance made, delivered gold full soon,
 Five thousand pounds of good gold of *England*,
 The Host received with victual aboundand,
 Both bread and wine, right gladly forth they gave,
 And other stuff, that they liked to have.
 Twenty dayes out the Host remained there,
 But want of victual gart them from it to fare,
 Yet still at peace the Host lodged that night,
 While on the morn the Sun was risen bright,
 Into *April* among the shawes sheen,
 When that the ground was clad with tender green
 Pleasant it was to any creature,
 In lusty love this time for to indure.
 The good women had freedom largely,
 But food was scant, they could get none to buy :
 Tursled up tents, and to the Countrey rade,
 On *Englishmen* full great heirship they made.

Burnt & brake down, buildings they spared nought
Right worthy *Wallace* low to ground they broght
All *Mydlame*-land they burnt up in a fire,
Brake Parks down, destroyed all the Shire.
Wilde Deer they flew, for other beasts were none
These war-men took of Vennison good wane.
Toward the South they turned at the last,
Made buildings bare, as far as ever they past.
The Commons all to *London* then they went,
Before the King, and told him their intent,
And said, they would, but he gart *Wallace* cease,
Forlake their faith and take them to his peace.
No Herauld there then durst to *Wallace* passe,
Whereof the King greatly aggrieved was.
Thus *Edward* left his people into bail,
Contrair *VWallace* he would not give battel,
Nor byde in field, for ought that they could say
Gave over the cause, to *London* past his way.
At men of wit this question here I ask,
Amongst Nobles, if ever any was
So long in *England*, through force or through case
Since *Brutus* death, but battel, but *Wallace*?
Great *Julius* the Empire had in hand,
Yet twice on force was put out of *England*.
With *Arthur* als, first of war when he prievd,
Twice did they fight, suppose they were mischiev
Awfull *Edward* durst not for *Wallace* bide (ed
In a plain battel, for all *England* so wide,
In *London* lay, and took him to his rest,
And brake his vow: which hold you for the best
Deem as ye list, good men of discretion,
Right clear it is to resolve this question,

my sentence now briefly will I passe :
 then *Wallace* thus throgh *Tork-shire* journeying
 actual as then was none left in the land, (was,
 in houses, where it might be warrand :
 the Host hereof abased was to bide,
 a food scanted, no pleasure was that tide.
 some bade turn home, & some would further mair
Wallace called *Jop*, and said to him right fair :
 thou knowest the land where most abundance is,
 thou our guide, and then we shall not misse
 actual to find, that wot I wonder well,
 thou hast I trust in *England* meikle feil.
 the King and his to strong strengths are gone,
 at jeopardie, now peril have we none.
 then *Jop* said, Sir, be ye guided by me,
 the plentiest part of *England* ye shall see :
 of wine and wheat there is in *Richmont-shire*,
 and other stuff for food, as ye desire.
 thereof I trow ye shall be well content,
 the Host was glad, and thitherward they went,
 any true *Scots* was sembled in that Land,
Wallace came well mo then nine thousand,
 of presoun part, some had in labour wrought,
 from either part full fast to him they sought.
Wallace was blyth of our own native kin,
 that came to him of bail that they were in.
 and all the Host, of comfort was blyther,
 that their own folk was multiplying there :
Richmont-shire they found abundance
 of bread and aile, with other purveyance :
 of ke Parks down, and flew beasts many one,
 of wilde and tame, forsooth they spared none.
 Th roughout

Throughout the land they past in good array,
A seemly place so found they in their way,
Which *Rams/* watch heght, as *Jop* himself then to
Febew was Lord and Captain in that hold.
Five hundred men were sembled in that place,
To save themselves and their goods from *Wall*
A roya! stead was by the Forreest side,
With turrats fair, and garrats of great pride,
Buildd about, right likely to be wight,
With five great towers well buildd to the hig
Feil men about on walls busked been,
In good armour that birnisht was full sheen.
The Host past by, and visited but that place,
Yet they within on loud defied *VWallace*.
And trumpets blew with many warlike sound.
Then *VWallace* said, Had we yon gallants down
On the plain ground, they would more sober
Then *Jop* said. Sir, ye gart his brother die,
In Heraulds weed, ye wot, on *Tinto*-hill.
Wallace answered, So would I with good will,
Had I himself: but we may not him dear:
Good men may thole of harlots scorn in wear.
Sir *Iohn* the *Graham* would at the bicker been
But *Wallace* loon the peril hath foreseen,
Commanded him to let his fierceness be,
We have no men to waste in such degree.
Would we them harm, I have another gate,
How we with fire within shall make them heat
For fire hath ay been fellon into wear,
On such a place it may do meikle dear:
Their bulwark old I see of withered oak,
Were it on fire, it would not bide a stroak:

houses and woods here is enough plentie,
no hews best of this Forrest let see.
All houses down, we shall not wein a deal,
the old timber will gar the green burn well.
his command right busily they wrought,
great wood in haste about the place they brought,
the bulwark wan these men of arms bright,
the barmkin laid timber upon hight :
men bow-men shot, to keep them from that cast,
that they about had fastned fire full fast :
women and bairns on *Wallace* loud can cry,
on knees they fell, and asked him mercy.
one quarter where fire had not yet tane,
they took them out of that Castle of stane,
one bet the fire with brands brim and bold :
the red flame rose full high about that hold.
Arrows of pick for fence were hanged there,
all strake in fire, their mischief was the mair.
Then the brim fire out over the Place was past.
When they within might neither shoot nor cast :
No bestial of neat and horse within,
amongst the fire they made an hideous din.
The armed men in harness were so heat.
Some down to ground dushed but more debate.
Some lay, some fell into the fellon fire,
mored to dead, and burnt up bone and lyre.
The fire brake in at all opens about,
none bade aloft, so fellon was the doubt :
He threw himself lap rudely from the hight,
through all the fire, can on the barmkin light :
With a good sword *Wallace* strake off his head,
up hint it up, and thrust it from that stead.

Five hundred men that were into that place,
Got none away, but dead withoutten grace.
Wallace bade still with his power that night;
Upon the morn, the fire had failed might,
Before the gate where it had burnt on breed,
A path they made, and to the Castle yeed,
Strake down the gate, and took what they might
Jewels and gold, great riches was therein. (w
Spoiled that place, and left nought else there,
But beasis, burnt bodies, and als wals bare.
Then took they her that wife was to *Fehew*,
Gave her command, as she was woman true,
To turse that head to *London* to King *Edward*.
She it received with great sorrow in heart.
Wallace himself these charges to her gave,
Say to yon King, but if I battel have,
At *London* gates we shal assaily fair,
In this moneth we think for to be there.
Traist in the truth, will God we shal not fail,
Unless I cease through charge of our Counsel.
The South-west part of *England* we shal see,
But he seek peace, or else bargane with me:
Upon a time he charged me on this wise,
Right boustefully to make to him service,
Such shal he have, as he us cause hath made.
Then moved they withoutten more abade,
Delivered she was from this Chevalrie,
Toward *London* she dight her earnestlie:
Unto the Town but more process she went,
Where *Edward* lay, sore moved in his intent:
His Nevoys head, when he saw it was brought,
So great sorrow sadly upon him sought.

chap. 4. Of Sir William Wallace. 213

With great unease upon his feet he stood,
 Keeping in wo for his dear tender blood.
 The Counsel rose, and prayed him to cease,
 To lose *England*, but if we purchase peace:
 When *Woodstock* said: This is my best counsel,
 To ke peace in time, as for your own avail,
 For ye tme more, we flake of our courage,
 For ye may get help of our barnage.
 The King granted, and bade them message send,
 To man was there that durst to *Wallace* wend.
 The Queen appeared, and saw the great distance:
 Well born she was of the right blood of *France*.
 She trowed well therefore to speed the mair,
 For self purposed in that message to fare.
 As she forethought that the King took on hand,
 Against the right so oft to reave *Scotland*.
 And feil men said, the vengeance hapned fair,
 Of great murther his men made into *Aire*.
 Thus deemed they in Counsel them amang,
 To this effect the Queen bowned to gang.
 When she hath seen each man forsake this thing,
 On knees she fell, and asked at the King:
 O veraign, she said, if it your wills be,
 That I desire yon Chiftain for to see:
 For he is known both worthy, wise, and true,
 For chance he would rather on women rue,
 Than on your men, they have done them such dear,
 When he them sees, it moves him ay to wear:
 I may not skaith, although I do not vail,
 To help this Land, I would make my travel:
 The Lords all, of her desire was fain,
 And to the King made instance into plain,

That

That she might pass: The King with backward
Half into yre he gave consent theretill.
Some of them said, the Queen loved *Wallace*,
For the great voice of his hie nobleness.
An hardy man, that is seemly withall,
Great favour will of Fortune to him fall;
Anent women is seen in many place.
So happened now in this time of *Wallace* :
In his rising he was a lover true,
And choosed one, but *Englishmen* her slew.
Yet said they nought, the Queen would on her tale
As for his love such travel for to make.
Now love or leave, or for help of their land,
I make rehearse, as I in old writ fand.
She graithed her upon a goodly wise,
With gold and gear, and folk at her devise:
Ladies with her, none other would they send,
And old Priests, that well the countrey kend.
Leave I the Queen to message ready dight,
And speak further of *VWallace* travel right.

The worthy *Scots* amongst their enemies rade
Destruction great upon them have they made,
Wasted the land about on either side,
No war-men then durst in their wayes abide.
They ransomed none, but to the death them dight
In many stead made fire broad and bright.
The Host was glad, and in a good estate,
No power was that would make them debate.
Great riches wan of gold and gear theretill,
Leaving enough to take at their own will.
In awful fear they travel through the land,
Made biggings bare that they before them fand.

Great

eat barmkins brake of steeds stark and strong,
 these wight war-men of travel thought not long.
 both in the land right earnestly they sought,
 Saint *Albans*, but harm there did they nought.
 the Pryor sent them wine and vennison,
 refreshed the Host with great food and fusion.
 the night appeared when they were at that place,
 then harbored they from thence a little space.
 choosed a stead where they should bide all night;
 tents on ground, and pavilions proudly pight,
 to a vail beside a river fair,
 on either side where wild beasts made repaire.
 watches out, that wisely could them keep,
 supper went, and timeously could sleep.
 meat and drink they have sufficiency.

the night was short, overdrave the darkful chance;
 CHAP. V. *How the Queen of England came
 and spake with Wallace.*

The merry day sprang up from the Orient,
 With beams bright illuminat the Occident;
 after *Titan*, *Phebus* uprised fair,
 high in his Sphear the signs made declare.
Aphirus began his mighty morrow course,
 the sweet vapour did from the ground resource.
 the donk dew from the heaven down did vail,
 every meid, both firth, forrest and dail:
 the fresh river amongst the rocks rang, (sang,
 through green branches, where birds blythly
 with joyous voice in heavenly harmony:
 then *Wallace* thought it was no time to ly:
 he blessed him, then suddenly up he rose,
 to take the air, out of his tent he goes.

Master *John Blaire* was ready hastily,
To Gods service bowed right reverently :
When that was done, *Wallace* could him array
In his armour, which was both good and gay.
His shining shield that birnisht was full bein :
His leg harnesse, that clasped was full clean,
Pullance gries he clasped on full fast,
A crosse birney with many sikker cast.
Breast plat, braisses that worthy were in wear,
Beside him forth *Top* could his basnet bear :
His glittering gloves graven on either side.
He seemed well in battell for to bide.
A good Girdle, and then a burely brand,
A staff of steel he gripped in his hand.
The host him blessed, and prayed God of his grace
Him to convoy from all mistempered case.
Adam Wallace, and *Boyd*, forth with him yeed
Endlong a river, out through a Forrest meid :
And as they walked over the fields green,
Out of the South they saw where that the Queene
Toward the Host came ryding soberly,
Fifty Ladies were in her company,
Wailed of wit, and deemed of renown,
Some widows were, and some of Religion.
And seven Priests that were entred in age :
Wallace to such did never great outrage,
But if to him they made a great offence.
Thus they approached on toward their presence.
At the Pavilion where they the Lyon saw,
To ground they light, and then on knees they faw
Praying for peace, they cry, with piteous cheer :
Earl Malcome said : Our chifcain is not here,

he bade her rise, and said: It was not right,
 Queen on knees to bow to lower wight.
 Up by the hand the Earl hath her tane,
 Out over they went, to *Wallace* have they gane?
 When she him saw, she would have kneeled down
 Arms soon he claught this Queen with Crown,
 And kissed her withoutten words more,
 So did he never to no *Sutherland* before.
 Madame, he said, right welcome mot ye be:
 Now pleased you our Hosting for to see?
 Right well, she said, of friendship have we need:
 God grant ye will our errand for to speed.
 After we must, suppose it like us ill,
 It trust us well, it is contrair our will.
 I shal remain, with this Lord I must gang,
 From your presence we shal not tarry lang.
 The Earl and he unto the Pavilion yeed,
 With good advice to deem more of this deed.
 The Counsel soon *Wallace* gart call them to
 Words, he said, ye wot what is ado,
 Of their coming my self hath no pleasance,
 And therefore must we work with ordinance,
 For men may be come tempting into wear,
 Amongst fools that cannot them forbear:
 By not this by these, or by the Queen,
 Now it be not good that she should mean:
 A ample take of long time passed by,
 Runsevail the treason was plainly,
 Women made that *Ganzelon* with him brought
 And *Turkie* wine forbear they could they nought
 Of use in war gart them desire their will, (ill.
 Which brought King *CHARLES* to fellon loss &

The flour of *France* without redemption,
Through that foul deed was brought to confusion
Command your men therefore in private wise,
On pain of life they work not on such guise.
None speak with them but wise men of great val
That Lords are, and sworn to this Counsel.
His charge they did as goodly as they mought,
This ordinance through all the Host was wrought
He and the Earle both to the Queen they went
Received her fair, and brought her to the tent,
To dinner bowned as goodly as they can,
And served was with many likely man.
Good purveyance the Queen had with her brogh
An assay she took of all that good her thought.
Wallace perceived, and said : We have no dread,
I cannot trow that Ladies will do that deed,
To poyson men, all *England* for to win.
The Queen answered : If poyson be therein,
Of any thing that is brought here with me,
Upon my self first sorrow ye shal see.
Soon after meat a Marshel gart all absent,
But Lords, and they to the Counsel that went :
Ladies appeared in presence with the Queen.
Wallace asked : What her coming might meant
For peace she said, that we have to you sought :
This burning war in bad hath many brought.
Ye grant us grace for him that died on tree.
Wallace answered : Madame, that may not be
England hath done so great harms unto us,
We may not pass, and lightly leave it thus.
Yes, said the Queen, for Christen folk we are :
For Gods sake, since we desire no mair,

We ought have peace. He said : That we deny,
 the perfect cause then shal I show for why :
 You seek no peace, but for your own avail,
 When that your King *Scotland* had gripped hail.
 or no kin thing that he before him fand,
 he would not thole the right blood in the Land,
 but rest their rent, then put themselves to dead :
 ransom of gold might make us no remead :
 his fell false war shal on himself be seen,
 then soberly to him answered the Queen :
 of these wrongs amends were most fair.
 Had me, he said, of him we ask no mair :
 but that he would bide us into battel,
 and God be Judge, he knows the matter hail.
 such thing, she said, it were not good, think me :
 peace now were best, if it might purchast be.
 Would ye grant peace, and crews with us to take,
 through all *England* we shal gar prayers make,
 for you and them, that in the war were lost.
 then *Wallace* said : where such cometh through
 prayer of force where so that it be wrought, (boast
 to us helps either little, or else nought.
 Rarely, she said, thus wise men hath us kend,
 y after wars, peace is the final end.
 Wherefore ye should of your great malice cease :
 the end of wars, is Charity and Peace.
 Peace is in Heaven, with blis and lestandness;
 we shal beseech the Lord of his hie grace,
 to command peace, then we may do no mair :
 Hadame, he said, ere your prayers come there,
 ends of *England* we think then for to have.
 that set ye thus on wars for to save,

From violent wars that we think not to dwell ?
Madame, he said, the truth I shall you tell :
After the date of *Alexanders* reign,
Our land three years stood desolate but King
Keeped full well at concord in good state,
Throgh twa that claimed, there hapned great
So earnestly accord them not they can, (b
Your King they asked to be their over-man,
Shily he said in strengths of *Scotland*,
The *Kingrike* then he took at his own hand:
He made a King against the righteous law,
For he of him should hold the Region aw :
Contrare his band were all the whole barnage,
For *Scotland* yet was never in thirlage.
Great *Iulius* that tribute took of all,
His winning was of *Scotland* but right smal.
Then your false King under colour but mair,
Throgh band he made to *Bruce* that is our heir
Undid that King which he before had made,
Throgh all *Scotland* with great power they rad
To *Bruce* sen syne he keeped no cunnand.
He said : He would not go to conquish land
To other men, and thus the case besel :
Then *Scotland* through he demanded him sell :
Slew our Elders, great pity is to see :
In prison then long time they keeped mee,
While I at last was casten out for dead.
Thanked be God, he sent me some remead.
Venged to be I proved all my might.
Feil of that kin to death since I have dight.
The rage of youth gart me desire a wife,
That rewed I sore, and will do all my life.

traitour Knight but mercy gart her die,
 the *Heslrig*, but for despite of me :
 then rang I forth in travail, wars and pain,
 while we redeemed part of our Land again,
 when your Counsel desir'd of us a trew,
 which made *Scotland* full graithly for to rew.
 so that peace they set a subtil Heire,
 when eighteen score to death they hanged there,
 that Nobles were, and worthy of renown.
 I doat armour eldse in that Region:
 the women als that dolefully was dight,
 that death me think to venge in all our might :
 that of my minde that death will never slide,
 all God me take from this false world so wide!
 O *Sutherland* then I can no pity have,
 our men in wars I never think to save.
 the bright tears was pity to behold,
 that fell from his eyes, when he this tale had told.
 the Queen weeped for pity of *Wallace*.
 then she said, wo worth the wicked case :
 that cursed time that *Heslrig* was born,
 any worthy through his deed are forlorn.
 I should have pain that causeless such one sleugh
 in *England* since then hath bought it dear enough,
 though she had been a Queen, or a Princess.
 O dame, he said, as God give me good grace,
 needs or Queen, of what state so they be,
 to her time she was as dear to me.
Wallace, she said, of this talk we will cease,
 the mends thereof is good prayer and peace!
 Grant, he said, of me as now no mair,
 this is right nought, but eeking of my care.

The Queen found well, language nothing her but
She trowed with gold that he might be overseen.
Three thousand pound of finest gold so red,
She gart be brought to *Wallace* in that stead.
Madame, he said, no such tribute we crave,
An other mends we world of *England* have,
Ere we return from this Region again,
Of your fierce blood that hath our elders slain,
For all the gold and riches of your Reign,
Ye get no peace, but desire of your King.
When she saw well gold might her not relieve,
Some part in sport she thought him for to prieve
Wallace, she said, ye are cleeped my love :
More abundantly I made me for to prove,
Trusting therefore your rancour for to flake,
Me think ye should do something for my sake.
Right wisely he made answer to the Queen,
Madame, he said, if verity were seen,
That ye me loved, I ought love you again :
These words are all for nothing but in vain :
In speach of love, subtill ye *Sutherland* are :
Ye can us mock, suppose we get no mair :
To take a liking, and then get no pleasure,
Such love as that, is nothing to advance.
In *London*, she said, for you I suffered blame,
Our Counsell als will laugh when I come hame
So may they say : Women are fierce of thought
To seek friendship, and then can get right nought
Madame, ye wot how ye were hither send,
Ye trow we have but little for to spend.
First with your gold. for ye are rich, I wist,
Ye would us blind, since *Scots* are so nice.

Then pleasant words of you and Ladies faire,
 As who would drive the bird into a snare,
 With a whiffel pipe, for it will freshest call :
 Madame, as yet, ye may not tempt us all.
 Great part of good is left amongst our kin,
 In England als. we find enough to win.
 Abated she was to make answer him till.
 Dear Sir, she said, since that it is your will,
 Wars or peace, what that you liketh best,
 Let your hie wit and good counsel digest.
 Madame, he said, now shal ye understand
 The reason why, that I will make no band :
 With your Ladies I cannot trews bind,
 For your false King will soon hereafter find,
 When he saw time, to break it at his will,
 And plainly say, He granted not theretill.
 Then had we none but Ladies to reprove,
 That shal not be, by God that sits above.
 Upon women I will no wars begin,
 Of you in field no worship is to win.
 All the whole pease on himself he shal take,
 Of peace, or wars, what we happen to make.
 The Queen granted this answer sufficient,
 So did the rest in plain that were present.
 His deliverance they held of great avail,
 And strong enough to show to their Counsel.
 Wo was the Queen her travel helped nought,
 The gold she took that they had with her brought
 Unto the Host right freely she it gave,
 To every man that liked for to have.
 Menstrels and Heraulds she gave abundantly,
 Beseeching them, her friends that they would be.

When *Wallace* saw the freedom of the Queen,
Sadly he said : The sooth vvell hath been seen,
Women may tempt the vvilest hath been wrought
Your great gentrice it shal not be for nought,
We you assure, our Host shal do nothing,
While time ye may send message from the King:
If it be so that he accord, and we,
Then for your sake, it shal the better be.
Your Heraulds als shal safely come and go,
For your freedom we shal trouble no mo,
She thanked him of his grant many syle,
And all her Lsadies on a goodly wise.
Gladly they drank, the Queen and good *Wallace*,
Her Lsadies als, and good Lords in that place.
Her leave she took for out langer abade,
Five mile that night south to a Nunry rade.
Upon the morn to *London* passed they,
In *W. stminster* where that the Counsel lay.
It needs not here now more rehearse this thing,
Wallace answer she gart show to the King.
The great commend then she to *Wallace* gave
Before the King, in presence of the lave,
The true *Scots* it should greatly applease,
Though *Englismen* thereof had little ease.
Of worship, wit, manhood, and governance,
Of freedom, truth, key of remembrance,
She called him there into their presence,
Though contrair them he stood at his defence :
So Chiftain like, she sayes, as he is seen,
Into *England*. I trow, hath never been.
Would ye of gold give him this Realms rent,
From honour he will not turn his intent.

Assured

assured ye are, while ye may message make,
 Of wise Lords some part I reed you take,
 To purchase peace withoutten words more,
 For all *England* may rew this raid full sore.
 Your Heraulds als to pass to him hath leave,
 In all the Host there shal no man them grieve.
 Then thanked they the Queen for her travel,
 The King and Lords that were of his Counsel.
 Of her answer the King appeased was.
 Then three great Lords they ordained to pass.
 Their Counsel whole hath found it for the best,
 Frews to take, or else they got no rest.
 An Herauld went in all the haste he may,
 To *Avane* wall, where that the *Scots* lay,
 Conduct to have, till they had said their will.
 The Counsel soon a conduct sent them till.
 Again he past with soverance to the King.
 Then choosed they three Lords for this same thing.
 The keen *Clifford*, that then was warden hail,
Bermon and *Woodstock*, all men of meikle vail,
 What these three wroght the rest should stand ther?
 The Kings self hath given them at their will. Till.
 Soon they were brought to speaking with *Wallace*
Woodstock then shewed forth many subtil case.
Wallace hath heard their *Sophisms* every deal;
 As yet, he said, me think we mean but well.
 In wrong ye hold, and doth us great outrage,
 Of houses part which are our heritage.
 Out of this peace in plain I make them known,
 Them-for to win, since that they are our own,
Roxburgh, *Barwick* that ours long time hath been
 Into the hands of King *Edward* I ween.

We ask here als by vertue of this band,
Our own young King by wrong led from *Scotland*
We shal have them withoutten words mair.
To his desire the Lords they granted there,
Right at his will they have consented hail:
For no kin thing the peace they would not fail.
The young *Randall* that then in *London* was,
The Lord of *Lorn* in this band he can ask.
The Earl of *Buchan*, but then in tender age,
After he grew a man of great vassalage.
Cumming and *Fowles* he gart deliver als,
Which after was to King *Robert* full false.
Wallange fled over, and durst not bide that mure,
In *Picardie* to ask him was no bute:
But he would rather have had that false Knight,
Then a thousand of finest gold so bright.
The *Bruce* he asked, but he was had away,
Before that time, to *Calice* many a day.
King *Edward* proved that they might not him get,
Of *Glocester* his uncle had him set,
That *Calice* had whole into his keeping.
Wallace that time got not his righteous King.
The Earl *Patrick* als from *London* they send,
With *Wallace* to go, as well before is kend.
Of this matter, and finall governance,
To King *Edward* he gave up his leadgeance.
And took to hold of *Scotland* evermair:
With full glad heart *Wallace* received him there.
They honoured him right reverently as Lord,
The *Scots* were all rejoiced at that concord.
An hundred horse with young Lords of renown,
To *Wallace* came, all freed of that prison.

Under his seal King *Edward* then gart send,
 For to give over, and make a final end,
Roxburgh, Barwick, which were of meikle vail,
 To *Scottish-men*, and all the bounds hail.
 For five years trews they promised by their band.
 Then *Wallace* said: We will pass near *Scotland*,
 Ere ought be sealed, and therefore make us boun.
 Again we will beside *Northallartown*,
 Where King *Edward* first battel heght to me:
 As we began, there shall it ended be.
 Greet well the *Queen*, he charged the message,
 It is for her that we left our voyage.
 A day he set when they should meet him there,
 And seal the pace, witboutten process mair,
 Upon the morn the Host but more advise,
 Tranointed North upon a goodly wise,
 To let the tryst that *Wallace* had them made,
 The *English* message came but more abade;
 They sealed the peace, without longer delay:
 The message then upon the second day
 To *London* went in all the haste they can,
 The worthy *Scots* with many likely man,
 To *Bamburgh* came, with all their power hail,
 Sixty thousand, all *Scots* of great avail,
 Ten dayes before *All-hallow-even* they fure,
 On *Lambmas* day they lighted on *Carham* mure
 There lodged they with pleasure as they mough
 while on the morn their Priests to the then brog
 In *Carham* Kirk, and seized in his hand
Roxburgh keyes; as they had made command,
 And *Barwick* als, which *Englismen* had lang,
 They freed the folk in *England* for to gang:

For their lives ished off either place,
 They durst not well bide reckoning with *Wallace*
 Captain he made in *Barwick* of renown,
 That worthy was, good *Christel* of *Setown*.
 Keeper he made to *Roxburgh* Castle wight,
 Sir *Iohn Ramsay*, a wise and worthy Knight.
 Then *Vallace* self with *Eirl Patrick* in plain,
 To *Dumbar* rode, and restored him again
 In his Castle, and als his heritage,
 With the consent of all the whole barnage,
 When *Wallace* was agreed with this Lord,
 To rule the Realm, he made him goodly ford.
 Scotland out over from *Ross* to *Sulway* land,
 He rode it thrie, and statute all the Land.
 In the *Lennox* a while he made repair,
 Sir *Iohn Menteith* a while was Captain there,
 Als twise before he had his gossip been,
 But no freindship betwixt them then was seen,
 Two moneths still he dwelt in *Dumbartane*,
 An house he founded upon a rock of stane,
 Men he left there to build it to the hight,
 Then to the *March* again he rode right,
 At *Roxburgh* they choosed him a place,
 A good tower there he gart build in short space.
 The King som stood in good worship and ease,
 Was none so great durst his neighbour displease,
 He able round gart labour thriftily,
 Victual and fruit there grew abundantly.
 Was never before since this was called *Scotland*,
 Such wealth and peace both at once in the Land.
 He sent *For* twice to *Bruce* of *Huntingtown*,
 Beseching him to come and take his Crown :

anfel he took at false Saxons, alace,
 had never hap in life to get *Wallace*.
 ee years as thus the Realm stood in good peace
 his saying me worth is for to ceas,
 further forth of *Wallace* will I tell,
 his life what aventure yet befell.
 Here endeth the first Conquest of Scotland.



THE NINTH BOOK.

CHAP. I.

How Wallace past into France.

A Royal King then reigned into *France*,
 Great brute he heard of *Wallace* governace:
 The proves, pryces, and of his worthy deed,
 for ward, fair, commended of manhood.
 humble, true, and proved well of prife,
 honour, truth, and void of covetice.
 noble King reigned in Royaltie,
 great delite this *Wallace* for to see:
 knew right well shortly to understand,
 great supprise and ov'rset of *England*.
 marvelled als of *Wallace* small power,
 but a King took such a Realm to stier,
 inst *England* and gart their malice cease,
 they desired with good to take peace.
 right anone a Herauld he gart call,
 short termes he hath rehearsed all,
 his intent compleated to an end,
 in *Scotland* he bade him he should wend:
 And

And he wrot right with very great honour,
To *William Wallace* as a Conquerour.

O Loved Leed, with worship wise and wi
Through very help in holding of thy right
Through right rescuing of thy native Land,
With Gods grace against thy foes to stand
In defence, helper of thy righteous blood.
O worthy Birth, and blessed be thy food,
As it is read in Propheſie beforne :
An happy time for *Scotland* thou was born :
I thee beſeech with all humilitie,
My cloſe letter thou would conceive and ſee,
As your brother, a chriſten King of *France*.
To the bearer ye hear and give credence.
The Herauld him bowned, and to the ſhip is gon
In *Scotland* ſoon he comes unto one.
But Herauld-like he ſeeks his preſence,
On land he went, and made no reſidence :
In every ſtead where he preſumed there,
So on a day he found him into *Aire*,
In good eſſear, and man-like company.
The Herauld then with honour reverently,
Hath ſaluſt him upon a goodly manner :
And he again with humble homely chear,
Received him into right goodly wiſe.
The Herauld then with worſhip to deviſe,
Betook to him the Kings writing of *France*,
Wallace on knee with lowly obeſſance.
Right reverently for the worſhip of *Scotland*,
When he it read, and had it underſtand,
At this Herauld he asked his credence,
With aſper ſpeech and manly countenance :

he him told, as I have said before,
 the Kings desire, what needs words more?
 his honour, and the great nobleness,
 your manhood, well known in many place.
 likes als well your worship to advance,
 ye were born a liedge man of *France*.
 his Region is floure of Realms seen,
 the great band of kindness you between:
 and since this Realm stands in such safety,
 were worship his presence for to see.
 Wallace conceived withoutten tarrying,
 the great desire of this most noble King:
 then to him said: So GOD of Heaven me save,
 hereafter soon an answer ye shal have,
 your desire that you have shown me till:
 welcome ye are with a free hearty will.
 the Herauld bode unto the twenty day,
 with *Wallace* still, in good welfare and play,
 consumed the time with worship and pleasure.
 good advise made his deliverance.
 with his own hand he wrote unto the King,
 his intent as touching to this thing.
 right rich reward he gave the Herauld to,
 and him convoyed when he had leave to go,
 out of the Town with goodly companie,
 his leave he took, and went unto the sea:
 his purpose was to see the King of *France*.
 good *Wallace* then hath made his purveyance,
 rarest but wear to *Saint Iohnstoun* could fare,
 counsel then he had gart ordain there:
 to his stead choosed a Governour,
 to keep the Land, a man of great honour;

James good Lord the Steward of Scotland,
Which father was, as stories beares on hand,
To good *Walter*, which was of hie parage,
Marjory Bruce then got in marriage.
Thereof as now to speak I have no space.
It is well knowen, thanked be Gods grace,
And to the Herauld withoutten residence,
How he appeared unto the Kings presence:
From the *Rochel* the land soon hath he tane,
Out over the land he graithed him to gain,
Seeking the King as goodly as he may:
So to the Court he passed on a day,
To *Paris* went, as pierlesse of renown,
This King that time held Pallace in that town.
When he him saw, hath graithly understand,
He spiered tydings, the welfare of *Scotland*.
The Herauld said into these terms short,
That all was good, he had the more comfort.
Saw thou *Wallace* the Chiftain of that Land?
And he said, Yea, that dare I take on hand,
A worthier wight this day is living none,
In way of war als far as I have gone.
The hie worship, and the great noblenesse:
The good welfare, pleasance and worthinesse:
The rich reward was worthy for to see,
That for your sake he kythed upon me.
And his answer in writ he hath you sent.
The King received it with a good intent.

O Royal Roy, and righteous crowned King,
Renowned of nobleness and vertues most condigne,
Ye know this well by other mo then me,
How that our Realm stands in perplexitie.

the fierce Nation that we are Neighbours to,
 when it pleaseth them, they make us ayado:
 band may be made of sufficience,
 say in it they find a variance.
 wait a time, will God that I may be,
 thin a year I will your presence see.
 this answer well pleased was the King.
 ve I them thus in Royalty to reign,
 d glad comfort, right as I have you told;
 Wallace forth I will my purpose hold.

CHAP. II.

Wallace past into France, and fought with
 the Red-River and vanquished him.

On April the one and twenty day,
 The Kalends changed as we use to say,
 the lusty time of Mays fresh coming,
 celestial great blythnesse in to bring.
 principal moneth forsooth it may be seen,
 the heavenly hews upon the tender green:
 when old Saturn his cloudy course hath gone,
 the which hath been both bird and beasts bone.
 Phœbus also with his sweet Vapour,
 comfort hath by working of Dame Nature.
 fructuous thing into the Earth about,
 that ruled is under the hie Region.
 when Luna in following of the sea,
 when bright Phœbus into his Schemes hie,
 the Bulls course so taken hath his place,
 and Jupiter was into Crabes face:
 when Aries the hot sign cholerick,
 to the Ram which hath his rowms rike:

Ther is

Thetis had his place and his mansion
In *Capricornus* the sign of the Lyon :
Gentle *Jupiter* with his mild ordinance,
Both herb and tree converts into pleasance ;
And fiesh *Flora* her flowry mantle spread
In every vaile, both houp, hill, and meid :
In this same time (for this mine Author sayes)
Wallace to passe off *Scotland* took his wayes,
By short advice he shop him to the sea,
And fifty men took in his company.
He let no word then walk of his passage,
Lest *Englishmen* had stopped his voyage :
Nor took no leave of Lords of Parliament :
He wist full well they would not all consent
To suffer him out of the Land to go,
For they anone without witting of mo,
He gart foresee, and ordain well the ship,
And these were they past in his fellowship.
Two *Wallaces* was his kinsmen full near,
Crawfurd, *Cleland*, to him were holden dear.
At *Kirkcubright* he ordained his passage,
Sea-men he let, and gave them goodly wage,
A good new barge right worthily wrought for war
They wanted not of wine, victuall, nor gear,
Wot ye they were a goodly company
Of wailed men had wrought full hardily :
Bon-aillies drank right gladly on the morrow,
Then leave they took, & with great God to borry
Boats were shot forth, and from the land they
With glad hearts at once in they went,
Unto the ship they rowed hastily,
The sea-men then working full earnestly,

kers wand in wisely on either side,
 their leads cast out, and waited well the tyde :
 the sailes fall, and took their course anone,
 a goodly wind out of the right airth came :
 the wicks on forestam ruled well their gear :
 the wads on Leiburd, with a Lordly fear.
 the wanes laid out, to lock their passage sound,
 with full sail from *Scotland* forth they found :
 sailed whole over the day and als the night :
 upon the morn when that the Sun shined bright,
 their ship-master unto the top he went,
 south-east he saw that troubled his intent,
 seven sailes all arrayed on a raw,
 of colour red, that toward them could draw.
 the glittering Sun upon them shewed bright,
 the sea about illuminate with the light.
 the mans sprit was in an extasie,
 down he went soon, and said right sorrowfullie :
 alace, alace, that ever I was born.
 without remed our lives are all forlorn.
 the cursed time I took this cure on hand,
 the best Chifstain, and rescue of *Scotland*,
 ever recklessly I have tane upon me,
 with weak power to bring him through the sea.
 enforced nought, would God I were torment,
 so *Wallace* might with worship scape unshent.
 When *Wallace* saw, and heard this mans moan,
 to comfort him with good will is he gone,
 after, he said, what hath annoyed thee ?
 Not for my self, this man said piteouslie :
 out of one thing I dare well undertain,
 though all were here the ships of broad *Britain*,

Part should we lose, except Fortune had sworn
The best war-man in sea is us beforne,
Living this day, and King is of the sea.
Wallace soon spiered, Wots thou what he may
The *Red-reaver* they call him in his style,
That I him saw, O cursed be the while:
For mine own life I would no mourning make:
Is no man born that yon tyrant will take.
He saveth none for gold, nor other good,
But slayes and drowns all derfly in the flood.
He gets no grace though he were King or Knight
This sixteen years he hath done great unright.
The power is so strong he hath to steir,
May none escape that comes in his danger.
Would ye him boord, no boot is to begin,
The lowest ship that is his flot within:
My self is done unto the doleful dead.
Then *Wallace* said: Since thou cannot remead
Tell me his feir, and how I shal him know,
What is his use, and then go lodge thee low.
The ship-man said: Full well ye may him ken,
By graith tokens, full clearly by his men.
His coat armour is seen in many stead,
All battel bown, in rayment all of red.
This foremost ship that pursues us so fast,
Himself is in, and will not be agast:
He will you hail, when that they come you near
Without carry then make you strike and stear:
Himself will enter first full hardily.
These are the signs that you shal ken him by,
A bar of blew into his shining shield,
A bend of white, desiring ay the field:

red betokens blood and hardiment,
 the white courage, increaseth his intent :
 the blew he bears, for he is a Christen man :
 he him answered *William Wallace* than :
 though he be Christen, this is no Christen deed :
 under loft, the Lord God mot us speed.
 the ship-master, and the steirs-man also,
 to the how but bade he gart them go :
 fifty men withoutten longer rest,
 Wallace gart ray into their armour prest,
 he and fourty on loft board laid they law :
William Crawford then to him can he caw,
 and said, Thou canst some part of ship-man fare,
 thou hast been used in the town of *Aire* :
 pray thee take this doctrine well of me,
 look that thou stand straitly by the tree :
 when they bid streik, to service be thou bairn :
 when I thee warn, draw up the sail again.
 the land cousin, come take the steir in hand,
 ere on the wail near by thee shal I stand.
 and guide our ship, as now I say no mair :
 the Barge began with a full warlike fare :
 himself on loft was with a drawn sword,
 and bade the steirs-man lay endlong the boord.
 loud he cryed, streik dogs or ye shal die.
Crawford let down the sail a little wие.
 the Captain soon lap in, and would not stint.
 Wallace hath him then by the gorget hint,
 the over-loft kest him where that he stood,
 while mouth and nose all rushed out of blood.
 forged knife braithly he braided out,
 the war-ships were lapped them about :

The Barge clipped, but they not fastned fast,
Crawfurd drew sail, shot by, and off them past
The Reaver cryed, with piteous voice so clear,
Grace of his life, for him that bought us dear.
Mercy, he cryed, for him that died on Rood,
Lecture to mend, I have spilt meikle blood.
For my trespass I would make some remead,
Many sakeless I have gart put to dead.
Wallace wist wel though he to death was brought
From them to scape no wise might he nought,
And of his life some rescue might he make,
A better purpose right soon then can he take :
And als he rewed, for his life had been ill :
In Latine tongue right thus he said him till :
I never took man that enemy was to me.
For Gods sake my life ye grant to me.
Both knife, and sword, he took from him anone,
Up by the hand as prisoner hath him tane.
Upon his sword sharply he gart him swear,
From that day forth he should him never dear :
Command thy men, said *Wallace*, to our peace
Their shot of guns, that was not eith to cease.
Their casting were awfull on either side,
The *Red-reaver* commanded them to bide :
Held up a gloove in token of the trew,
His men beheld, and well the senzie knew.
Left off their shot, the sign when that they saw,
His greatest Barge toward him can he caw.
Let be your war, these are friends at one :
I trow to God our worst hours are gone.
He asked *Wallace*, to do what was his will :
With short advise, right thus he said him till,

the *Rochel* I would ye gart them sail,
Englishmen we wot not what may ail,
 them commanded withoutten words mair,
 on sail and wind toward the *Rochel* fare :
 there, Will God, our purpose is to be :
 ok well about for scurriours in the sea.
 charge they wrought in all the haste they can,
 d *Wallace* desired to talk more with this man :
 sely he speared, In vvhhat land art thou born ?
 France, he said, and mine Elders beforne :
 d there we had some part of heritage,
 rough fierce Fortune hath broght me in a rage.
 llace yet spierd: How came thou in this life ?
 sooth, he said, but through a sudden strife.
 hapned I into the Kings presence,
 er reklesly to do a great offence :
 worthy man of good kin and renown,
 at through my deed was put to confusion,
 ad of one straik, what needs words more ?
 mends it nought, though I repent it sore.
 rough friends of Court I scaped off that place,
 d never since could get the Kings grace.
 of our kin they gart for my sake die.
 time I saw it might no better be,
 leave the Land, that me behoved on need :
 on a day to *Burdeous* I yeed,
English ship so got we on a night,
 sea labour full earnestly us dight.
 me assembled misdoers other mo,
 within short time we multiplied so,
 where few that might against our power gang.
 tyranny thus have we reigned lang.

These

These sixteen years I have been on the sea,
And done great harm, therefore full wo is me
I saved none for gold nor great ransome,
But slew and drowned in the sea all down.

Favour I did to folk of sundry Land,
But *French*-men no favour of me fand :
They got no grace, so far as I might reign,
Als on the sea I cleiped was a King.

Now see I well that my fortune is went,
Vanquisht with one that gart me sore repent.
Who would have said this famine day at morn,
I should with one thus lightly down be born?
In great haithing my men would it have tane,
My self heght als to have match'd any twain;
But I have found the very plain contrare,
Here I give over robbery for evermair :
In such misrule I shall never arms bear,
But if it be in honest use of wear.

Now I have told part of my bliss and pain,
For Gods sake now some kindness show again.
Mine heart will break but I wot what ye be,
Outrageously that hath rebuted me :
For well I trow'd that living had been nane,
By strength of force might me as prisoner tane :
Except *Wallace*, that hath redeemed *Scotland*,
The best is called this day living of hand :
Into his wars were worship for to wake,
Into this world I trow he hath no maik.
Wallace smiled, and said, Friend, it may be,
Scotland hath need of many such as thee.
What is thy name? tell me so have thou seil.
Forsooth he said, *Thomas of Longoveil*.

Well brook thou it, thus endeth all our strife,
 hope to please GOD, in mending of thy life :
 thy faithfull friend my self thinks for to be,
 and als my name I shal soon tell to thee :
 for chance of war thou should no mourning make,
 as weird will work, thy Fortune must thou take :
 I am that man that thou advancest hie,
 and but short time since I came to the sea.
 Of Scotland born, my right name is Wallace.
 On knee he fell, and thanked GOD of grace :
 dare avow that yeelden is mine hand,
 to the best man this day that is livand.
 Orlooth, he said, this pleaseth me meikle more,
 then of florings ye give me sixty score.
 Then Wallace said : Thou art here now through
 my purpose is to pass now into France, (chance,
 into the King, since I am bown to pass :
 to my reward thy peace I think to ask.
 Peace I would have fain of my native King,
 and no longer then in this Realm to reign.
 When thou take leave to come from it again,
 to thy service I think for to remain.
 Service, he said. Thomas, it may not be,
 at good friendship, as I shall keep to thee.
 art draw the wine, and each one merry made,
 the ships by then were in the Rochelrade.
 The red blasons, as they had born in wear,
 the town was soon into a sudden fear :
 the Red-reaver they said was at their hand,
 ontrare whose strength might none against him
 some ships fled & som the land hath tane, (stands
 arions blew, and Trumpets many ane.

When *Wallace* saw the people was on fier,
He gave command no ships should nearer pier,
But his own barge in their haven gart he draw,
The folk was glad when they the banner saw:
Full well they knew in gold the red Lyon,
Let up the port, received them in the town.
They covered him for all they had there brought
The red Navie unto the haven sought,
On land then went where that them liked to pass,
Right few wist there what *Scottish-man Wallace*
But wel they thought he was a goodly man, (w
And honoured him with all the craft they can.
Those four dayes *Wallace* remained there,
These men he called when he was bown to fare
He them commanded upon that coast to bide,
While he them freed, for chance that might betide
Bear you evenly, what good that ever ye spend,
Live on your own while I you tydings send.
Gar sell your ships, and make you men of peace
It were good time of wickedness to cease.
Your Captain shal pass to the King with me,
Through help of God, I shal his warrand be.
He gart graith him in suite with his own men,
Was no man there that might well *Thomas Ken*
Likely he was, manly of governance,
Like to the *Scots*, by manly countenance,
Save of his tongue, that *Scots* had he none,
In *Latine* well, it might have sufficed one.
Thus past they on in all the haste they may,
To *Paris* town they went upon a day:
Tydings was brought of *Wallace* to the King,
So great desire he had of no kin thing,

in that time while he had seen *Wallace*,
 to meat himself he waited upon case :
 a garden where he gart them be brought
 his preience, with manlike feir they fought.
 two and fifty at once all kneeling down,
 and salust him as Roy of most renown,
 with ruled speech in so goodly advise,
France could no more nurture them devise.
 the Queen had leave, and came in her effer,
 meikle she heard of *Wallace* deed in wear.
 that needs more of courtesie to tell ?
 they kepted well that to the *Scots* befelt.
 Kings fare I dare make no rehearse,
 feeble minde, my troubled sp'rit transverse,
 the rich service, what needs words mair ?
 ght none be found, but it was present there.
 on after meat the King to parlour went,
 with goodly Lords, there *Wallace* was present.
 en communed they of many sundry thing,
 speak with him great desire had the King.
 him he spiered of wars the governance.
 answered him with manly countenance,
 every point, so far as he had feel,
 Latine tongue, right naturally and well.
 the King conceived soon by his hie courage,
 that war-men used by reis in their passage :
 to what mind the Red-reaver then was,
 rvel he had how he let *Wallace* passe.
 him he said, Ye are something to blame,
 might have sent with your Herauld from hame,
 er power to bring you through the sea.
 and thank you, Sir, thereof enough had we :

Few men may pass where they find no peril :
Right when may keep where none is to assail
Wallace, he said, thereof marvel have I,
A tyrant reigns in yre full cruelly,
Upon the sea, that great sorrow hath wrought
Might we him get, it should not be for nought
Born of this land, a native man to me,
Therefore on us the greatest harm doth he.
Then *Thomas* quoke, and changed countenance
He heard the King his ill deeds disadvantage.
Wallace beheld, and fenzielt in a part,
Forsooth, he said, we found none in that airt,
That proffered us any such unkindness.
By your leave, Sir, I speak in homeliness.
Trow ye by sight ye could the Squyer know ?
Full long it is since time that I him saw,
But these words of him are but in vain,
Ere he come here right good men will be slain
Then *Wallace* said: Here have I brought with
Of likely men that dwelt in our Countrie :
Which of all these would ye call him most like
Amongst them blent this Royal Roy most rike,
Vized them well, both stature and courage,
Manner, mackdome, their fashion, and visage:
Sadly he said, advised soberly,
That largest man which stands next you by,
Would I call him, by mackdome to devise.
These are nothing but words of office.
Before the King on knees fell good *Wallace* :
O Royal Roy, of hie honour and grace,
With waste words I will you not trouble,
Now I will speak some thing for mine avail :

barren land hath been overset with war,
Saxons seed that doth us meikle dear,
 in our elders, destroyed our righteous blood,
 sted our land of gold and other good,
 ye are here with might and Royalty,
 ye should have to our adversity,
 us support for kindness of the band
 which is confirmed betwixt you and *Scotland*:
 I am here for your charge and pleasance,
 life-lait is but honest chevissance:
 wer of Realms, forsooth is this Region,
 my reward I would have great guerdon.
Wallace, he said, ask what so ye would have,
 od gold or land shall not be long to crave.
Wallace answered: So ye grant it to me,
 at I would have, it shal soon chosen be.
 at ever ye ask that is in this Region.
 shall it have, except my wife and Crown.
 thanked him of his great kindliness,
 my reward shal be asked of grace,
 ce to this man I broght with me throgh chance
 ge I quite claim all other gifts in *France*.
 is same is he, if that ye knew him well,
 at ye of spake *Thomas of Longoveil*:
 rigour ye desired he should be slain,
 im restore unto your peace again:
 ceive him fair as liedge man of your land.
 e King marvelled, and could in study stand,
 ffectly he knew that it was *Longoveil*:
 him forgave his trespass every deal,
 t for his sake that had him hither broght,
 t gold nor good, nor else he did it nought.

Wallace, he said, I had lever of good land,
Ten thousand pound had ceased in thine hand:
That I have said, shall holden be in plain,
Here I receive *Thomas* to peace again.
Dearer to me then ever he was before;
All for your sake, though it were meikle more.
But I would wit how this matter befell.
Wallace answered, The truth I shall you tell.
Then he rehearsed what hapned on that day,
As ye before mine Author hath heard say.
When the good King hath heard the sudden call
Upon the sea, before sight of *Wallace*:
The King him held right worthy to advance,
He saw in him manhood and governance.
So did the Queen, and all the other Lords,
Each wight of him great honour then records.
He purchast peace for all the power hail,
Fourteen hundred was left at the *Rochel*.
Gart cry them free true servants to the King,
And never again for fault into such thing.
When *Thomas* was restored to his right,
Of his own hand the King had made him Knight.
After he gave state to his nearest heir,
And made himself with *Wallace* for to fare. (c)
Thus he hath brought these men from reis throu
By sudden chance of him and wight *Wallace*,
Thus leave we them in worship and pleasance,
At liking still with the good King of *France*.

CHAP. III.

How Wallace past in Guyen.

THese twenty dayes he lodged into rest,
So to remain, he thought it not the best.

all into peace he could not long endure:
 and: why? contrareous it was to his nature.
 ght well he wist *Englishmen* occupied
Guyen that time, therefore hath he espyed
 me jeopardie upon them for to make:
 more goodly leave he at the King can take.
 of *French-men* he none would with him call,
 tell the first time, for aventure might fall,
 y, at sir *Thomas* that service could persue.
 e wist not well if all the lave were true.
 n call of *Scottish-men* then sembled hastily,
 ine hundred soon of vvorthy Chevalry.
 ce, *Guyen* land full hastily can ride:
 raised fell fire, and wasted winnings wide.
 orts they brake, and stalwart biggings wan,
 ords, verfly to death brought many a *Sutherland* man.
 warlike town so fand they in that land, (hand,
 Which *Schemen* heght that *English-men* had in
 g, toward that stead full sadly *VWallace* sought,
 y any way assail it if he mought.
 rgan to have, if he mought get them out,
 Knig Great strength of wood there was that town about:
 he town stood als upon a water side,
 (c) nto a Park that was both long and wide.
 000 They busked them well while passed was the night.
 When the Sun rose four hundred men he dight:
 The lave he gart *Crawford* in bushment take,
 if they mistred a rescue for to make.
 Then *Longoveil* that ay was full savage,
 With *Wallace* past as one to that skirmage.
 These four hundred that was full well arrayed,
 ft. Before the town in plain battel displayed.

It was not well then known in that Countrie,
The Lyon in gold that awfull was to see ;
A forrey cost, and ceased meikle good :
War-men within that wisely understood,
Soon ished out the prey for to rescue,
The worthy *Scots* feil *Englishmen* they slew ;
The lave for dread fled to the town again :
The forrey took the prey and passed in plain,
Toward the Park, but power of the town
Ished out again in awfull battel bown :
A thousand whole of men of arms strang,
Few bode within that might to arms gang.
Then *Wallace* gart the forrayers leave the prey,
Assembled soon into a good array,
A cruel counter was at that meeting seen,
Of the wight War-men into their armour sheen,
Feil left their life upon the *Sutheron* side,
But not for thy full boldly they abide.
Of the *Scots* part then worthy men they flew :
William Crawford that well the peril knew,
Out of the Park he gart the bushment passe,
Into the field where feil men fighting was,
At their entry they gart full many die,
The *Englishmen* was wonder loath to flee.
Full worthily they wrought into that place,
Bade never so few so long against *Wallace*.
With such power that day as he was there,
On either side assailed wonder fair.
Into the stour so fellonly he wrought,
That worthy men derfly to death was brought :
With points pierced through plaits birnist bright
Wallace himself, and sir *Thomas* the Knight,

Whom

om so they hit made never more debate.
 Sutheron part was handled there so hate,
 that place they might no longer bide,
 of that field with sore hearts they ride,
 to the town they fled full hastily :
 place followed, and his good Chevalry,
 ating so fast into the thickest throng,
 ile in the town they entred them among.
 h him Crawford and Longoveil the Knight,
 Richard als, Wallace his cousin right :
 een they were of Scots company,
 as hapned they among that great party.
 ey, ruel Porter got upon the wall,
 ed out the pin, let the Port-culzies fall.
 Englishmen saw entred was no mo.
 en on the Scots full hardily they go.
 to a wall they have their backs set,
 straits and sore boldy about them let.
 : hard Wallace the turngrece well hath seen,
 followed fast upon the Porter keen,
 on the wall dead in a dyk him drave,
 t up the port, and let in all the lave.
 en Wallace men had thus the entry wun,
 l great slaughter again they have begun,
 ey saved none upon the Sutheron side,
 at weapons bare and harnesse in that ride,
 men and bairns, the good they took them fro,
 en gave them leave in the room land to go :
 e Priests als that was not in the field,
 : aged men that might not weapons weild,
 ht ey slew none such, for Wallace charge it was,
 t made them free in largess for to passe.

Riches of gold they got in great plenty,
Harnes and horse that might them well suppl
With *French* folk plenish the town again,
On the tenth day the field they took in plain,
The river down into the land they sought,
On *Sutheron* men full great mastery they wrou
Then when true men to the King told this tale
Of *French-men* he sembled a battel,
Twenty thousand of true liedges of *France*,
His brother them led was Duke of *Orleans* :
Through *Guyan* land in rayed battel rode,
To follow *Wallace* who made but litle bode :
For *French* supply to help them in their right,
Near *Burdeus* ere they overtake him might,
Good *Wallace* was there, and chosen hath a p
For some men told that *Burdeus* with great m
Within short time thought battel for to give :
But fra they wist that *French* folk would relie
With great power for helping of *Wallace*,
Other purpose they took into short space :
In *Picardie* some message could they send,
Of *Wallace* coming they have told to an end.
Of *Glocester* Captain of *Calais* was
The hardy Earl, he made him for to pass
In *England* soon, and then to *London* went,
Of *Wallace* deeds he told in Parliament.
Some plainly said, that *Wallace* brake the peace
Wise men said, Nay, and prayed them for to ce
Lord *Bewmont* said, He took but for *Scotland*,
And not for *France*, that shall you understand
If your indentures speak of any mair,
He hath done wrong, the sooth ye may declare

Cap. 3.
Woodstock answered, said, Ye have spoken well,
the contrare right that tale is every deal.
You be he that band for him and his,
say no man say, but he hath done amiss :
for principally he band with us the trew,
and now again begins he malice new.
The King, he said, if ever ye think to make
in Scotland war on hand, now shall you take,
while he is out, or else it helps nought.
Woodstock said, the whole Counsel hath wroght
power they raised in Scotland for to ride,
by land and sea, they would no longer bide.
Their land Host they rayed soon indeed,
their vanguard took the hardy Earl to lead,
Of Glocester, that of war had great feil :
Of Longcastle the Earl governed well
the middle-ward, and to the sea they send
Sir John Psewart, that well the North land kend.
The Knight Wallange before the Host in rade,
And such a way with evil Scottish-men made,
Many Castles he gart soon yeilded be
To Englishmen withoutten more mellie.
Ere the best wist that it was war in plain,
Entred he was into Bathwel again.
Sir John Psewart that came in by the sea,
Saint Iohnstoun soon got through a jeopardie
Dundie they took, and put Scots-men to dead,
In Fyfe from them was not kepted a stead.
And all the South from Cheviot to the sea,
Into the West there might no succour be.
The worthy Lord that should have governed this,
God hath him tane to everlasting blis.

On his purpose at *Guyen* at the wear,
On *Englistmen* he had done meikle dear.
While good *Guthrie* had gotten his presence,
He halted him fast, and made no residence.
He hath told him with *Scotland* how it stood.
Then *Wallace* said, These tydings are not good
I had example of times that is by worn,
Trews to bind with them that are mensworn:
But I as then could not think on such thing,
Because that we took peace with their false King
By their Chancelor the other peace was bound
And that full sore our fore Elders hath found.
Under that trew they gart eighteen score die,
That noble were the best in our Countrie.
To the great God my vow now here I make,
Peace with that King I think never to take.
He shall repent that he this war began,
Thus moved he with many noble man,
Unto the King, and told him his intent.
To let him passe, the King would not consent,
While *Wallace* there made promise by his hand
If ever again he thought to leave *Scotland*,
To come to him, his great Seal to him gave,
Of what Lordship that he liked to have.
Thus at the King an hasty leave took he,
No man with him he brought from that Countie
But his own men, and Sir *Thomas* the Knight,
In *Flanders* land they past with all their might
Guthrie barge at the *Sluce* could ly still:
To sea they went with a full eager will.
Both *Forth* and *Tay* they left, and passed by
On the North Coast good *Guthrie* was their gy

In *Monrosse* haven they brought him to the land,
 To true *Scots* it was a blyth tydand.
 Sir *John Ramsay* that worthy was and wight,
 From *Ochter-house* the way he choosed right,
 To meet *Wallace* with men of arms strong:
 For his coming they had thought wonder long.
 The true *Ruthwen* came als withoutten bade,
 In *Birnane* wood he had his lodging made.
Barclay, Bisset, to *Wallace* sembled fast,
 With three hundred to *Ochter-house* he past.
 The end of the ninth Book.



THE TENTH BOOK.

CHAP. I.

How Wallace wan Saint Johnstoun.

THe latter day of *August* fell this case,
 For the rescue thus ordain'd good *Wallace*
 Of *S. Johnstoun* the *Sutherland* occupied:
 Fast toward *Tay* they passed and espyed:
 Ere it was day under *Kinnowl* them laid.
 Out of the town, as *Scots-men* to him said;
 Their servants ished with carts, hay to lead:
 So it was sooth, and hapned in that stead.
 Then six there came, and brought but carts three;
 When they of hay were leading busilie,
Guthrie with ten in hands then hath them tane,
 Put all to death, of them he saved nane.
Wallace in haste gart take their upmost weed,
 And such like men they wailed with good speed.

True men him took, and could to *Arran* pass,
His son *Walter* that but a child yet was.
Adam Wallace that wist of no supplie,
To *Rauchly* went, and *Lindsay* of *Craigie*.
Good *Robert Boyd* in *Bute* made residence,
For hasty deceit, they took them to defence.
Sir *Iohn* the *Graham* in *Dundaff* might not byde
Succour he sought to the Forest of *Clyde*.
The Knight *Psewart* a Sheriffe made in *Fife*,
Sir *Aymars* brother, and gave for terme of life.
These lands all that *Wallange* had before,
Richard Lundie had great dread through their
He liked not for to come to their peace. (shore
Therefore in *Fife* they would not let him cease,
To pass over *Tay* as then it might not be,
For *Englishmen* sore ruled that Countrie.
Out of the Land he stole away by night,
Eighteen with him that worthy were and wight.
And als his son that was of tender eild,
But after soon he could well weapons weild.
At *Striveling* bridge ere that the watch was set,
There passed he the way withoutten let.
In *Dundaff* mure sir *Iohn* the *Graham* he sought,
A woman him told as then before was wrought,
Unto a strength he went upon the morn,
Lanerk was tane with young *Thomas* of *Thorn*:
Hay and *Lundie* they might no longer remain,
By South *Tinto* to lodge they made in plain.
Sir *Iohn* the *Graham* got wit that they were there
To them he past withoutten process mair.
Wallange gart bring from *Caryle* carriage,
To stuff *Boswell*, both good wine and vernage.

Lundie

undie and Graham got wit of that vittail,
 ght suddenly they made them to assail :
 tie they were of noble Chevalry,
 gainst four score of *English* company.
 Squyer then keepest the carriage,
 l Brankistnabait whole then was his heritage,
 undie and Graham met with the Squyer wight,
 il *Englishmen* derfly to death he dight :
 ty were slain upon the *Sutherland* side,
 d five *Scots*, so boldly they abide :
 reat good they wan, both gold and other gear,
 ctual and horse, thus happened in this wear.
 nce they have seen well long they might not lest
 o the land, therefore they thought it best
 o seek some place in strenth that they might bide
 e *Sutherland* folk had plenisht on each side :
 undies lodge they left upon a night,
 to the *Lennox* they past the way full right,
 o Earl *Malcome* that keepest that Countrey
 om *Englishmen*, through help of their supply,
 on and *Lyle* into the *Bassabade*,
 t *Englishmen* so great mastery had made,
 at all the South they had into their hand :
 d Hew the *Hay* they sent into *England*,
 d other heirs, to prison at their will. (til,
 e Northland Lords saw none help come them
 Squyer *Guthrie* amongst them ordained they,
 warn *Wallace* in all the haste he may :
 t of *Aberbrothock* he passed to the sea,
 d at the *Sluce* landed full soon hath he.
 Flanders land no residence he made,
 France he past : but *Wallace* well abade

On his purpose at *Guyen* at the wear,
On *Englistmen* he had done meikle dear.
While good *Guthrie* had gotten his presence,
He halted him fast, and made no residence.
He hath told him with *Scotland* how it stood.
Then *Wallace* said, These tydings are not good
I had example of times that is by worn,
Trews to bind with them that are mensworn:
But I as then could not think on such thing,
Because that we took peace with their false King
By their Chancelor the other peace was bound
And that full sore our fore Elders bath found.
Under that trew they gart eighteen score die,
That noble were the best in our Countrie.
To the great God my vow now here I make,
Peace with that King I think never to take.
He shall repent that he this war began,
Thus moved he with many noble man,
Unto the King, and told him his intent.
To let him passe, the King would not consent,
While *Wallace* there made promise by his hand
If ever again he thought to leave *Scotland*,
To come to him, his great Seal to him gave,
Of what Lordship that he liked to have.
Thus at the King an hasty leave took he,
No man with him he brought from that Countie
But his own men, and Sir *Thomas* the Knight,
In *Flanders* land they past with all their might
Guthrie's barge at the *Sluce* could ly still:
To sea they went with a full eager will.
Both *Forth* and *Tay* they left, and passed by,
On the North Coast good *Guthrie* was their gy

In Monroffe haven they brought him to the land,
 To true Scots it was a blyth tydand.
 Sir John Ramsay that worthy was and wight,
 From Ochter-house the way he choosed right,
 To meet Wallace with men of arms strong:
 For his coming they had thought wonder long.
 The true Ruthwen came als withoutten bade,
 In Birnane wood he had his lodging made.
 Barclay, Bisset, to Wallace sembled fast,
 With three hundred to Ochter-house he past.
The end of the ninth Book.



THE TENTH BOOK.

CHAP. I.

How Wallace won Saint Johnstoun.

THe latter day of *August* fell this case,
 For the rescue thus ordain'd good Wallace
 Of S. Johnstoun the *Sutherland* occupied:
 Fast toward *Tay* they passed and espyed:
 Ere it was day under *Kinnowl* them laid.
 Out of the town, as *Scots-men* to him said,
 Their servants ished with carts, hay to lead:
 So it was sooth, and hapned in that stead.
 Then six there came, and brought but carts three.
 When they of hay were leading busilie,
 Guthrie with ten in hands then hath them tane,
 Put all to death, of them he saved nane.
 Wallace in haste gart take their upmost weed,
 And such like men they wailed with good speed.

Four were right good, *Wallace* himself took and
A russet cloak, and with good *Ruthwen*,
Guthrie, *Bisset*, and als good yeomen two,
In that each lute he graithed them to go.
Fifteen they took of men of arms wight,
In each cart five they ordained out of sight.
Full subtilly they covered them with hay,
Then to the town they went the gainest way.
These carters had short swords of fine steell,
Under their weed, then drove the carts forth well.
Sir *John Ramsay* bode in the bushment still,
When mister were, to help them with good will,
These true carters past out withoutten let,
Out over the bridge, and entred at the gate!
When they were in, their cloaks they cast them fra,
Good *Wallace* then the chief Porter could ta
Upon the head while dead he hath him left,
Then other two the life from them he rest.
Guthrie and *Bisset* did right well in the town,
And *Ruthwen* als dang of their fey men down.
The armed men that in the carts were brought,
Rose up, and well their devour duely wrought:
Upon the gate they gart feil *Sutheron* die.
Then *Ramsays* spy hath seen them get entrie,
The bushment broke both bridg, & port hath wun.
Into the town great strife there was begun.
Twenty and one ere *Ramsay* came in plain,
Within the town had fourty *Sutheron* slain.
The *Englishmen* to array them were not gone,
The *Scots* as then leasure let them have none:
Fia good *Ramsay* with his men entred in,
They saved none were known of *Sutheron* kin.

and Longovert the worthy Knight sir Thomas,
 loved well there, and many other place:
 Against his dint few *Englishmen* might stand;
 Wallace in him great faith and kindness fand.
 The *Sutheron* part saw well the town was tint;
 Scarcely they fled, as fire doth from the flint.
 Some fled, some fell into draw-dykes full deep,
 Some to the Kirk, their lives if they might keep.
 Some fled to *Tay*, and in smal vessels yeed:
 Some derfly died, and drowned in that stead.
 John *Psewart* at the west gate out past,
 Methwen wood he sped him wonder fast.
 Hundred men the Kirk took for succour:
 Wallace would no grace grant them that hour
 He bade slay all of cruel *Sutheron* kin,
 For to slay he thought it was no sin.
 Our hundred men without the town were dead,
 Ten score on life scaped out of that stead.
 Lives and bairns they made them for to go,
 With Wallace will he would slay none of tho:
 Whes they found that *Englishmen* brought new,
 He shent the town with worthy *Scots* and true.
 John *Psewart* left Methwen forcht strong,
 Went to the Gask full feil *Sutheron* among:
 And then in Fyfe, where Wallange Sheriff was,
 He scurriours soon out throgh the land to pass,
 And gathered men a stalwart company,
 In Ardrachatan he drew them privily,
 And dained them in ready bargain bown,
 Again he thought to assail Saint Johnstoun,
 Where Wallace lay, and would no longer rest:
 He led the town as then him liked best.

Sir *Iohn Ramsay* great Captain ordained he,
Ruthwen Sheriff at one accord to be,
This charge he gave if men them warning made
To come to him withoutten more abade :
And so they did when tydings was them brought
With an hundred *Wallace* forth from them sought

CHAP. II.

The Battel of Black-Irn-side.

IN *Fyfe* he past to visie that Countrie,
But wrong warned of *Englishmen* was he,
Sir *Iohn Psewart* when they were passed by,
From the *Ochel* he sped him hastily,
Upon *Wallace* followed with all his might :
In *Abernethy* took lodging the first night :
Upon the morn with fifteen hundred men,
To *Black-Irn-side*, as his guides could him ken.
There *Wallace* was and might no message send,
To *Saint Iohnstoun*, to make his journey kend :
For *Englishmen* that full subtile hath been,
Great watches warn'd that non should pass between
Then *Wallace* said, This matter likes not me,
He called to him the Squyer good *Guthrie*,
And *Bisset* als that knew full well the land,
And asked at them what deed was best on hand
Message to make, our power for to get,
With feil *Sutherland* we will be unbeset.
And wicked *Scots* that knowes the Forest best,
They are the cause that we may get no rest.
I dread far more *Vallange* that is the guide,
Then all the rest that comes upon that side.
Then *Guthrie* said, might we get once over *Tay*,
To *Saint Iohnstoun* it were the gainest way,

to warn *Ramsay*, we would get succour soon :
 ever sooth it is, that cannot well be done.
 Right well I wot, vessel is leaved nane,
 from the *Wood-haven* to the ferry called *Arrane*.
 When *Wallace* said : the water awful is,
 my self can swim, I trow, and aile no miss :
 but curier use accordeth not for me,
 and leave you here, yet I had rather die.
 Through Gods grace we shal better eschew,
 the strength is strong, and we were men anew.
Elchock park but forty men were we,
 or seven hundred, and gart feil *Sutherland* die.
 Escaped well in many unlikely place,
 so shal we here through the help of Gods grace,
 While we may last, we may this wood hold still :
 therefore each man be true of hardy will.
 And that we do so nobly into deed,
 if us be found after no lack to reed,
 the right is ours, we should more ardent be,
 think to free this Land or else to die,
 his wailed speech, with wit and hardiment,
 made all the rest so cruel of intent :
 some bade take field, and give battel in plain,
Wallace said, no, these words are all in vain.
 We will not leave that may be our vantage,
 this wood to us is worth a whole years wage,
 if hewen timber in haste he gart them take,
 piles of Oake and a great Barriers make,
 at a fore-front into the Forrest side,
 made a great strength, where they purposed to
 belled them fast to trees that growing was, (bide,
 that they might well in from the Barriers passe,
 And

And see their avail on either side about,
Then come again, when they saw there was doubt
By that this strength arrayed was at right,
The English Host approached to their fight.
Then *Pfewart* came, that way for to have wend
That they were wont, his guides so him kend.
At their entry they thought to have passage,
But soon they found that made them great strife
A thousand he led of men of armor strang, (page)
With five hundred he gart *John Wallange* gang
Without the wood, that none should scape the
Wallace with him had forty archers thro, (fr)
The rest were spears full noble in a deed,
On their enemies they bickert with good speed.
A cruel counter was at the Barreris seen.
The *Scots* defence so sikker was and keen,
Sutheron stood aw to enter them among,
Feil to the ground they overthrew in that thron
A rowm was left where part in front might fare
Who entred in, again yeed never mair.
Forty they slew that goneward would have pass
All disarrayed, the Host was all agast.
One part of horse throgh shot to death was brog
Brake to a plain, the *Sutheron* to them sought.
Then *Pfewart* said, Alace, how may this be?
And do no harm, over great rebute have we.
He called *Wallange*, and asked his counsel:
Sheriff thou art, what may us best avail?
But few they are that makes this great debate.
John Wallange said, This is the best I wate,
To cease thereof, and remain here beside,
For they may not long in the Forest bide,

or fault of food they must in the Country,
 then were more time to make on them melly:
 ere they be won on force into this strife,
 eil that ye lead shall erer losse their life.
 then *Pfewart* said, This reed I will not take,
 and *Scots* be warn'd, rescue soon will they make:
 if this despite a mends I think to have,
 or die therefore in number with the lave.
 to a range my self on foot will fare:
 eight hundred he took the likliest that was there,
 then bade the rest at the Barrers bide still,
 with *John Wallange*, to rule them at his will.
Wallange, he said, be forward in this cale,
 such a snare we could not get *Wallace*.
 take or slay him, I promise by my life,
 that King *Edward* shall make thee Earl of *Fife*,
 if yon East part we think to enter in,
 bade no more, might ye this barrers win:
 as they be closed graithly amongst us so,
 but marvel be, they shall no further go.
 assailie sore when ye wot we come near,
 on either side we shall hold them on stear.
 thus *Pfewart* charged upon an awfull wise,
Wallace hath seen what hath been their devise.
 good men he said, ye understand this deed:
 or sooth, he said, they are meikle to dread.
 on *Pfewart* is a worthy noble Knight,
 forward in wars, right hardy, wise and wight:
 if assailie he ordains wonder sore,
 is for to harm, mans wit can do no more.
 pleasant it is a wise Chifstain to ga
 to Chifstain like, it should great comfort mae,

To his own men, and they of worship be,
Then for to see ten thousand cowards flee.
Since we are set with enemies on each side,
And here on force must in this forest bide:
That all the rest of us abased be:

Assay the first, for Gods sake, cruellie.

Crawfurd he left, and *Longoveil* the Knight,
Fourty with them, to keep the barriers wight.
With him sixty all worthy men in weed:
To meet *Pfewart* with hardy will they yeed:
A manner of dyke into the wood was made,
Of thortour trees, boldy he there abade.
A down-with wall the *Sutheron* to them had,
Soon sembled they with straits sore and sad,
Sharp spears then dushed on either side,
Through birnish bright made wounds deep & wide
The vantage was the *Scots* them danted so,
That no *Englisch* durst from his fellow go,
To break array, or foremost enter in,
Of Christen blood to see it was great sin,
For wrongous cause, and hath been many a day.
Feil *Englischmen* in the dyke dead they lay:
Spears full soon all into splenders sprong,
With sharp swords they hewed on in the throng
Blood bursted out through fine harness of mail.
John Wallange als full sharply can assail
Upon *Crawfurd*, and the Knight *Longoveil*,
With their power kepted the barriers well:
Made good defence, by wit, manhood and might
At the entry feil men to death they dight.
Thus all at once they failed either place:
None that was there durst turn to the barres:

to help *Wallace*, no man of his durst pass,
to rescue them, so fell the fighting was.
either hand they handled were so hote,
at do or die, no succour else they wot.
Wallace was sad into that stalwart stour,
Sutherland, *Bisset*, with men of great valour,
Robert Wallace that worthy was of hand,
Robert Stewart marveled that contrar them might stand.
that ever so few might bide in battel place,
gainst them, and matched face for face.
thought himself to end that matter well,
he prest in with a good sword of steel;
to the dyke a *Scottish* man he gart die,
Wallace therefore in heart had great pitie,
wends to have he followed on him fast,
but *Englishmen* so thick betwixt them past,
that upon him a straik get could he nought.
ther worthy dierly to death he brought.
ops he made through all the Chevalry,
the hardy *Scots* that wrought so worthily,
when *Sutherland* saw these good men were so drest,
onger to bide they thought it not the best,
for score were slain ere they wold leave that stead
and fifty als was in the barriers dead.
trumpet blew, and from the wood can draw,
Wallace left off that sight when that he saw.
saylie more they thought it was no speed,
thout the wood to counsel fast they yeed.
the worthy *Scots* to rest them was right faine,
all hurts they had, but few of them were slain.
Wallace bade all of good comfort to be,
anked be God, the fairer part have we.

Yon Knight *Pfewart* hath at great journies be
So sore assay I have but seldom seen.
I had lever on *Wallange* wroken be,
Then any man that is in yon menzie.
The *Scots* all into the barrers yeed,
Stanchd wounds that could full braithly bleed
Some *Scots* men had bled full mickle blood,
For fault of drink, and als wanting of Food,
Some sembled fast that had feil hurts there.
Wallace therefore sighd with heart full sair,
An hat he hint, to get water is gone,
Other refuge as then he wist of none.
A little strand as then hee found him by,
Of clear water he brought them boundantly,
And drank himself; then said with sober mude,
The wine in *France* me thought not half so good
Then of the day three quarters was over went,
Sir *John Pfewart* hath casten in his intent,
To sailie more as then he could not prieve,
While on the morn that new men could relieve
And keep them in while they for hunger sore,
Come in his will or else to die therefore.
Wallange, he said, I charge thee for to bide,
And keep them in while I to *Comper* ride :
Remain thou with five hundreth at thy will,
And I the morn with power shall come thee til
John Wallange said, this charge I here forsake
After this day all night I may not wake.
But trust ye well they will ish to the plain,
Though ye bide als, or else die in the pain.
Pfewart bade bide, or underly the blame,
I thee command in good King *Edwards* name,

or here to God a vow I make beforne,
 and they break out, to hang thee on the morn.
 of this command *John Wallance* had great dread,
Psewart from them with nine score into deed,
 next hand the wood, and his good men of *Fyfe*,
 the *Scots* wer blyth whē that they heard such strife,
Wallace drew near, his time when that he saw,
 to the wood side, and could on *Wallance* caw.
 the Kinght hath heght the morn to hang thee hie,
 come in to us, I shal thy warrand be,
 contrait him, and all King *Edwards* might :
 ke we him quick, we shal him hang on hight :
 good Lordship I shal thee give here East,
 this each land that thy brother hath leif't.
Wallance was wise, full soon could understand,
 by likeliness *Wallace* should win the Land:
 and better him were upon the right to bide,
 then be in war upon the other side :
 with short advisement to *Wallace* soon they sought
 when *Psewart* cry'd, and said: That bees for noght
 and als of kind thou art of heritage :
 toward, on thee is evil wared great wage :
 ere I shal bide, my purpose to fulfil,
 ther to die, or have thee at my will.
 at all his speech to pass they would not spare,
 with full glad heart *Wallace* received him there.
 that *Ruthwen* and *Ramsay* of renown,
 a true *Scot* that past to Saint *Johnstoun*,
 them warning made that *Psewart* followed fast
 on *Wallace*, then were they sore agast :
 out of the town ished in all their might,
 with three hundred that worthy were and wight

To *Black-Irn-side* assembled in that place,
As *Wallange* was gone in to good *Wallace*.
The Knight *Pfewart* hath well their coming seen
A fair plain field he choosed them between :
Eleven hundred and four score then had he,
The *Scottish* men were five hundred and sixtie :
There were but few a plain field for to take :
Out of the wood good *Wallace* can him make :
He got no wit of them that comming was,
More hardiment was from the strength to pass.
But when he heard *Ruthwen* and *Ramsay* cry,
Of *Ochter-house* blyth was his Chevalry :
Might they of gold have bought a Kings rent,
The good *Wallace* might not so well content.
Then to array they yeed on either side,
In cruel yre in battel bown to bide :
Worthier men then *Pfewart* sembled there,
In all his time *Edward* had never mair :
But *Pfewart* saw his number was far ma,
His power soon he gart divide in twa :
To fight in that cause knightly he them kend,
In that journey either to win or end.
The worthy *Scots* that fi st amongst them bade,
Full great slaughter on *Englishmen* they made
Into the wood before had proved so well,
That on the plain they sonziet not a deal.
In courage grew as they were new begun,
Short rest they had from rising of the sun.
By that *Ramsay* and good worthy *Ruthwen*,
Throughout the thickest of the preals is gone,
Slops they made amongst the *Englishmen*,
Dislevered them by twenty and by ten.

1 Chap. 2. of Sir William Wallace. 267

When spears were gon, with swords of mettall cleare
To Englishmen their coming sold full deare.
Wallace and his by worthines of hand,
Fell Sutherland blood gart light upon the land.
The two fields together reiled then,
Sir Iohn Psewart with many noble men,
To help their Lord, three hundred in a place,
About him stood, and did their business,
Defending him with many awfull dint,
While all the outward of the field was tint.
Of commons, part into the forest fled,
Succour to seek: their men so had them led.
Then Scots hath seen so many in a rout
With Psewart stand, that guarded him about,
Upon the sides assailed wonder fair,
The poleist plaits with points pierced bair,
The Sutherland made defence full cruelly,
All occupied was this noble Chevalry.
Sir Iohn Ramsay would they had yeelden been.
Wallace said, Nay, it is a wrong ye mean.
Ransome to take, we cannot now begin,
On such a wise this Land we may not win:
No Knight of old our enemy hath been,
So fell to us of them I have not seen:
Now he shall die through help of Gods grace,
He came to pay his ransome in this place.
The Sutherland saw and wist plainly to die,
Relieve was none, suppose that they would flee,
Freshly they fought as they had entred new.
Upon our side part worthy men they flew.
Then Psewart said, Alace in wrong doing,
Our lives we lose for pleasure of our King.

That fellon Knight doubted his life right nough
Amongst the Scots full hardily he wrought,
Bisset he strake to deeth withoutten mair:
Wallace, pressed with his sword birnisht bare,
At Pswarts hals he etled with great yre,
Through pesane stut in sunder strake the swyre.
Dead to the ground he rushed for all his might,
By Wallace hand thus ended that good Knight,
The remanent withoutten mercy they slay:
For good Bisset the Scots was wonder wae.
In bands some they sticket but remead,
No Sutheron past with life out of that stead.
Then to the wood for them that left the field,
A range they set, thus might they have no bield
Yeed none away was contrare our opinion,
Good Ruthwen past again to Saint Johnstouns.
Sir John Ramsay to Cowper Castle rade.
That house he took, for defence none was made
Wallace, Crawford, and with them good Guthrie
Richard Wallace had long been in mellie.
And Longoveil into Lundores bode still,
Fasted they had too long against their will.
Wallange they made their stewart for to be,
Of meat and drink they found abundantie.
The power fled and durst no longer bide,
That was before upon the Sutheron side.
Upon the morn to Saint Andrews they past,
Out of the town that Bishop bowned fast.
The King of England had him thither send,
That cent at will he gave him in commend.
His Kings charge as then he durst not hald.
A wrongous Pope that tyrant might be cald.

new fled with him, and got away by sea,
 for all Scotland. Wallace he would not see.
 Of him as then he made but light record,
 Gart restore him that was their righteous Lord.
 The worthy Knight that into Cowper lay,
 Gart spoilzie them upon the second day.
 Then ordained men, at command of Wallace,
 Out more processe, for to cast down the place.
 Wynders they gart soon pierce out throgh the wal,
 Soon punfions fied, unto the ground cast all.
 Sir Iohn Ramsay then to Carrail can fare,
 Sutherland were fled, and left but walls bare:
 After Psewart they durst not carry lang,
 The Scots at large out through all Fife rang.
 No Englishmen were left in that Country,
 But in Lochlevin there bode one company:
 Upon that Inch in small houses they light,
 Castle was none but walled with water wight.
 Beside Carrail sembled Wallace beforne,
 His purpose was for to assay Kinghorn:
 A Knight Musgrave then Captain in it was,
 By short advice he purpos'd for to passe:
 Rather he would byde challenge of the King,
 Then with Wallace to reckon for such thing.
 That house he took, and little tarry made,
 Upon the morn withoutten more abade,
 Out over the mure where they the tryft had set,
 Near Scotland well there lodging took but let.
 After supper Wallace bade them go rest,
 My self will wake, me think it may be best.

CHAP. III.

The winning of Lochlevin.

AS he comanded, but graithing they have done,
Unto their sleep, *Wallace* the grithed him soon
Past to *Lochlevin*, as it was near midnight,
Eighteen with him that he had warned right:
These men weined well he came to visie it.
Fellows, he said, I do you well to wit,
Consider well this place, and understand,
That it may do full great skaith to *Scotland*:
Out of the South, and power come them till,
They may take in, to keep at their own will:
Upon yon *Inch* right many men may be,
And ished out, their time when that they see.
To bide long here, we may not well for chance,
Yon folk hath food, trust well at suffisance:
Water from them forsooth cannot be set,
Some other wile behoveth us to get.
Ye shall remain here at this part all still,
And I my self shall bring the boat you till.
Therewith his weed in haste off casteth he,
Upon yon side no watch-men can he see:
Held up his shirt and took his sword so good,
Bound on his neck, then lap into the flood,
And over he swam, for letting had he nought.
The boat he took, and to his men it brought,
Arrayed them well, and would no longer bide,
But passed in, and row'd to the other side:
The *Inch* they took, with drawn swords in hand,
They spared none that they before them fand.
Strake doors up, and sticked men where they lay,
Upon the *Sytheron* thus sadly sembled they.

thirty they flew that were into that place,
 to make defence the *English* had no space.
 their women five were sent out of that stead,
 Women nor bairns he never put to dead.
 the goods they took, as it had been their own.
 then *Wallace* said: Fellows, I make you known,
 the purveyance that was within these wanes,
 We will not tine, gar semble us all at anes:
 let warn *Ramsay*, and our good men each one,
 will remain till all the stuff be gone.
 sent forth a man their horses for to keep,
 drew up the boat, and then took beds to sleep.
Wallace power near *Scotland* well which lay,
 before the sun they missed him away:
 some mourning made, and marvelled at the cas
Ramsay bade cease, and mourn not for *Wallace*,
 it is for good that he is from us went,
 That ye shal see, and trust for veriment:
 Mine head to wed, *Lochlevin* he past to see,
 But in that place, no *Englishmen* found he,
 into this land betwixt these waters left.
 Tydings of him full soon ye shal hear eft.
 As they about were talking on this wise,
 Message soon came, and charged them to rise.
 My Lord, he said, to dinner hath you cali'd
 into *Lochlevin*, which is a likely hald.
 Ye shal fare well, therefore put off all sorrow.
 They graithed them right early on the morrow,
 And thither past of *Wallace* well to wit:
 Then sembled in a full blyth fellowship.
 They lodged there till eight days were at end,
 Of meat and drink they had enough to spend.

Turled forth gear that *Sutheron* had brought the
Gart burn the boat, to Saint *Iohnstoun* they far
Bishop *Sinkler* that worthy was and wise,
To *Wallace* came, and told him his advise :
Thus he desired *Wallace* with him to ride,
And in *Dunkeld* sojourn'd that winter tide.
But he said : No, that hold I not the best,
And *Scotland* thus, in peace I cannot rest.
The Bishop said plainly : We may not wend,
Into the North for men I rede you send.
I grant, quoth he, and choosed a messenger,
The worthy *Iop* was with the Bishop there,
And Master *Blair*, while *Wallace* came they bad
with that good Lord, that noble chear them made
Wallace sent *Blair* into his Priests weed,
To warn the West where friends had great dread,
How they should pass, or to good *Wallace* win.
The *Englishmen* that held them long in twin.
Adam Wallace and *Lindsay* that was wight,
Rauchly they left, and went away by night,
Throughout the land, to the *Lennox* they fare,
To Earl *Malcome*, that welcomed them full yair
Master *Iohn Blair* was glad of that semblie,
Good *Graham* was there, and *Richard* of *Lundie*
Als *Robert Boyd* out of *Bute* to them sought.
Got they *Wallace*, of nothing then they rought.
But *Englishmen* betwixt them was so strang,
That they in plain might not well to him gang.
Iop passed on, for nothing could he let,
Great power then as there he might not get.
The Lord *Cumming* that Earl of *Buchan* was,
For old envy, he would let no man pass :

at he might let, in good *Wallace* supplie,
 he *Earl Patrick* at plain field keeped he :
 et poor men came, and proved all their might,
 to help *Wallace*, in fence of *Scotlands* right :
 he good *Randal* in tender age was kend,
 et of good men out of *Murray* he send.
 to past again, and came in presence soon,
 fore *Wallace*, and told how he had done :
 et *Master Blair* so good tydings him brought,
 et of *Cumming Wallace* full little rought :
 as *Englishmen* they hade full meikle dread,
 a *Fife* was tint, the worse they thought to speed :
 he Duke and Earl that time in *Scotland* led,
 ptains they made, in *England* then they sped :
 Wallace him bowned, when hethought time thold be
 om *Saint Johnstoun*, and took with him fiftie :
 even of *Ireland*, and *Keirly* that was wight,
 om *Englishmen* they had holden the right.
 watch-mens weed, and fended them right well,
 good *Wallace* they were as true as steel :
 follow him, those two thought never lang,
 rough the *Ochel* they made them for to gang :
 on more power he carried not that tide,
 keep the land the rest he gart abide :
Striviling bridge as then he would not pass,
 strong power of *Englishmen* there was.

CHAP. IV.

The winning of Airch.

The *Airch* Ferry they passed privately,
 And busked them in a dern stead threby :
 cruel Captain in *Aire* dwelt that year,
England born, that heght *Thomlin* of *Wear* :

An hundred men were at his lodging still,
To brook that land they did both power and will
A *Scottish* fisher which they had tane beforne,
Contrate his will, gart him be to them sworn :
In their service they held him day and night.
Before the sun, *VWallace* gart *Iop* him dight,
And sent him forth the passage to espy,
On the fisher they hapned suddenly,
All him alone, but one boy that was there.
Iop hint him soon, and for no fear wou'd spare,
By the collar, and a knife out pulled he :
For *Gods* sake, this man asked mercie.
Iop spiered soon : Of what Nation art thou ?
A *Scot*, he said, but *Sutheron* gart me vow,
In their service, against my will full fair,
But for my life, that I remained there :
To seek fishing, I came in this North side :
Pe ye a *Scot*, I would fain with you bide.
Then he him brought in presence of *Wallace* :
The *Scots* were blyth when they had seen this call
For with his boat they might well passed have,
For ferry craft he thought not for to crave.
Upon that side long space they tarried nought,
To the south land with full glad hearts they soght
Then brake the boat when they were landed there
Service of it *Sutheron* might have no mair: (spee
Then through the moss they passed with good
To the *Tormood*, that man with them they led.
The widow their brought tydings to *Wallace*,
Of his true *Eme* that dwelt at *Dunnipace*,
Thomlin of *Wier* in prison had him set.
For more treasure then he before might get.

Wallace said: Dame, he shal well loosed be,
 he morn by noon, or mo therefore shal die.
 he got them meat, and in quyet they bade,
 while it was night, then ready soon they made:
 toward *Airth hill* right suddenly they drew,
 strength there was that well the fisher knew,
 of draw-dykes, and full of water wan,
 wisely thereof he watched them, this man
 in the back-side he led them privatlie,
 from the water, as wont to come was he:
 over a smal bridge good *Wallace* entred in,
 to the hall himself thought to begin,
 from the supper as they were bown to rise,
 he salust them upon an awful wise,
 his men followed suddenly at anes,
 fast sorrow was raised in those wanes.
 With shearing swords sharply about them dang,
 on the floor were felled them amang.
 With *Thomlin* of *Weer*, *Wallace* himself hath mer,
 fellow-straik sadly upon him set.
 through head and swyre, all through the coast him
 he worthy *Scots* fast stuck all the lave: (clave,
 hept well the doors, & to the death them dight.
 to scape away the *Sutheron* had no might.
 some windows sought for to have broken out,
 at all for nought, full fey was all the rout:
 about the fire gushed the blood so red,
 in hundred men was slain into that stead.
 when *Wallace* sought where his Uncle might be,
 in a deep cave he was set dolefully,
 where water stood, and he in yrons strang:
Wallace full soon the braisses up he dang.

Out of the dark brought him with strength at lift
 But noyse he heard, of nothing else he wist :
 So blyth before in world he had not been :
 And therewith fighed when he had *Wallace* seen.
 In ditches the dead bodies out they cast,
 Graithed the place as then them liked best.
 Made full good chear, and wise watches they set.
 While near the day they slept without let.
 When they had sight, spoiled the place in hy,
 Found gaining gear, both gold and jewelry.
 On all that day in quyet held them still :
 When *Sutheron* came received them with good will
 In that labour the *Scots* were all full bane.
Sutheron came in, but none went out again.
 Women and bairns put in prison and cave,
 So they might make no warning to the lave.
Steven of Ireland, and *Keirly* that was wight,
 Keeped the port upon the second night.
 Before the day the worthy *Scots* role,
 Tursed good gear, and to the *Tormood* goes,
 Remained there while night was come on hand,
 Then bowned them in quyet through the land,
 The widow soon, fra they were passed doubt,
 A servant sent, and let the women out,
 To pass from *Airth*, where that they liked best,
 Now speak of them that went into the west.

C H A P. V.

How *Wallace* burnt the Englishmen in *Dumbarton*

W *Allace* himself was sikker guide that night
 To *Dumbarton* the way he choosed right
 Ere it was day, for then the night was lang,
 Unto the town full privately they gang :

cicle of it *Englishmen* occupied :
 good *Wallace* soon through a dark gate him hyed,
 into the house which he was wont to ken,
 where a widow dwelt, which friend was to our men.
 About the bed, on the back side was made
 a modern window, was neither long nor braid :
 here *Wallace* called, and soon fra she him knew,
 in haste she rose, and privately him drew
 into a close barn, where they might keeped be :
 both meat and drink she brought them in plentie :
 a goodly gift to *Wallace* als she gave,
 an hundred pounds and more out over the lave.
 Five sons she had, were likely men and wight,
 on oath to him she gart them swear full right.
 In peace they dwelt, in trouble they had been,
 and tribute payed to *English* Captains keen.
 For *John Mentieth* the Castle had in hand ;
 but some men said, there was a private band
 to *Sutherland* made, by means of that Knight,
 of their supply to be at all his might.
 Whereof as now I will no processe make.
Wallace that day a short purpose can take.
 When it was night he bade the widow passe,
 and mark the doors where *Sutherland* dwelling was ;
 then after this he and his Chevalrie,
 graithed them well, and weapons took on hie.
 Went to the gate where *Sutherland* were on sleep ;
 a great Ostellary our *Scots* took to keep.
 An *English* Captain was sitting up so late,
 while he and his with drinking were made hate ;
 nine men was there with him of hie courage.
 Some would have had good *Wallace* in that rage ;
 Some

Some would have bound Sir *John the Graham*
through strength.

Some would have had good *Boyd* at swords length

Some wished *Lundie* that scaped was in *Fife* :

Some wighter was nor *Setoun* then in strife.

When *Wallace* heard the *Sutheron* make such din

He gart all byde, and him alone went in :

The lave remained to hear of their tydance.

He salust them with sturdy countenance :

Fellows, he said, since I came last from hame,

In travel I was in land of uncouth fame :

From south *Ireland* I came in this Countrie,

The new conquest of *Scotland* for to see.

Part of your drink and some good would I have.

The Captain then a shrewd answer him gave :

Thou seemest a *Scot*, likely to be a spy,

Thou mayest be one of *Wallace* company,

Contrate our King he is risen again,

The land of *Fyfe* he hath riden in plain :

Thou shalt bide here, while we wot how it be :

Art thou of his, thou shalt be hanged hie.

Wallace thought then it was no time to stand,

His noble sword he gripped soon in hand,

Over-thort the face drove the Captain in teen,

Strake all away that grew above the een :

Another braichly on the breast he bore,

Both brain & bone the burely blade throgh shored

The rest rusht up, then *Wallace* in great ire,

The third he felled derfly into the fire.

Steven of Ireland and *Keirly* in that throng,

Keeped no charge, but entred them among,

And other mo that to the door can preass :

While they him saw, ther could nothing them ceass :

the Sutherland men full soon were brought to dead:
 the Hostler bade them all good aile and bread.
 Wallace said, No, while we have leasure mair,
 be our guide, thou shalt before us fare,
 and begin fire where that the Sutherland lyes.
 the Hostler soon upon a hasty wise,
 set fire in hand, and to a great house yeed,
 where Englishmen were into meikle dread:
 for they wist not while that the red flame rose,
 wood as beasts among the fire then goes,
 with pains fell rushed full sorrowfully:
 he lave without of our good Chevalry,
 at each house where the Hostler began,
 heepest the doors, from them seaped no man.
 for all their might, thogh King Edward had sworn,
 not none away that was of England born,
 at either burnt, or but rescue was slain,
 and some through force driven to the fire again:
 some Scots folk in service them amang,
 from any pain freely they let them gang.
 three hundred men was to Dumbarton send,
 to keep the Land, as their Lord had them kend,
 withoute of them for ay was this Region.
 Wallace ere day made him out of the town,
 into the cave of Dumbarton they yeed,
 and all that day they sojourned but dread:
 both meat and drink the Hostler gart be brought.
 when night was come, in al the haste they mought
 toward Rosneath full earnestly they gang,
 for Englishmen was in that Castle strang:
 On the Garloch they purpose them to byde,
 betwixt the Kirk that near was there beside,

And to the Castle full privatly they draw,
Under a bray, and lodged them full law,
Beside the water where common use had they,
From Castle to the Kirk they past each day :
A marriage als was that day to begin,
All ished our, and left no man within,
That fence might make, but servants in that place.
Thus to that tryst they passed upon case.
Wallace and his drew them full privily,
Near hand the place when they were passed by :
Within the hall, and thought to keep that stead,
From *Sutberon* men, or else therefore be dead.
Compleat was made the marriage into plain,
Unto *Rosneth* they passed home again :
Four score and mo was in that company,
But not arrayed as was our Chevalry :
To the Castle they went to passe but let,
The worthy *Scots* so hard upon them set,
Fourty at once derfly to death they bare,
The remanent affrayed was so sair,
Longer in field they had no might to byde,
But fiercely fled from them on either side.
The *Scots* there well hath the entry won,
And slew all such as the house found was in :
Then on the flyers followed wonder fast,
No *Englishmen* with their life from them past,
The women soon they seized upon hand,
Keeped them close, for warning of the land :
And dead bodies all out of sight they cast,
Then at good ease they made them for to rest.
On their purveyance seven dayes lodged there,
At rude coast, to spend they would not spare.

When

When *Sutherland* came, they took them gladly in,
 at out again, they let none of that kin,
 Who tidings sent the Captain of that stead,
 their servitours the *Scots* put to dead,
 boyled the place, and left no goods there :
 take walls down, and made the biggings bare.
 When they had spilt al stonework that they might,
 then kindled fire, and from *Rosneth* they fought :
 When they had burnt all tree-work in that place,
Wallace gart free the women of his grace :
 to do them harm his purpose never was :
 then to *Falkland* the worthy *Scots* can passe,
 where Earl *Malcome* was biding at defence,
 right blyth he was of *Wallace* good presence :
 then he found there a noble company,
 at *John* the *Graham*, and *Richard* of *Lundy*,
Adam Wallace that worthy was and wise,
Marclay and *Boyd*, with men of mickle prise :
 at Christmas there, *Wallace* sojourned still.
 Of his mother tidings was brought him till :
 at time before she had left *Ellerslie*,
 for *Englishmen* she durst not in it be :
 from thence disguised she past in pilgrims weed.
 Some girth to seek in *Dumfermling* she yeed,
 sicknesse she had, forsooth into that stead.
 Deceased she was, God took her spirit to lead.
 When *Wallace* heard that these tidings were true,
 then sadnesse sore on each side did persue :
 to thank he took, because it is natural,
 he loved God with likker heart and heal.
 Better him thought that it was happened so,
 then *Sutherland* should her put to other wo.

He ordained *Jop*, and also Master *Blair*,
 Thither they past and for no cost to spare,
 But honourably put corps to sepulture:
 At his command they served all their cure,
 Doing thereto as death desired to have.
 With rich intire the corps they put in grave:
 Again they turned, and shewed of her end:
 He thanked God, what grace that ever he send
 He saw the world was full of fantasie,
 Comfort he took, let all mourning go by:
 His most delight was for to free *Scotland*.
 Now will I tell what case then came on hand.

CHAP. VI.

*How Sir William Douglas won the Castle of Sa-
 quhaire by a jeopardie, and how William Walla-
 rescued him from the English-men, and put
 them out of that part.*

SIr William long of Douglas dail was Lord,
 By his first wife, as right is to record:
 Deceased then out of this worldly care,
 Two sons he had with her that lived there,
 Which likely was and able in courage,
 To School was sent into their tender age:
James and *Hew* so heght these brethren twa,
 And after soon their Uncle could them ra:
 Good *Robert Keith* had them from *Glasgow* towne
 And over the sea to *France* hath made him bowne
 At study then he set them in *Paris*,
 With a Master that worthy was and wise:
 The King *Edward* took their father the Knight
 And held him still though he was never so wight

Whi

the time he had assented to his will.
 marriage als they had ordained him till,
 Ladie Ferres, of power and hie blood?
 thereof came to his life tittle good :
 sons he got on this Lady but mair,
 h Edwards will he took his leave to fare.
 Scotland came, and brought his wife in peace,
 Douglas dwelt, forsooth this is no leese :
 Edward trowed that he had stedfast been,
 to their faith, but contrare soon was seen.
 the Scots blood remained in Douglas,
 inst England, which proved in many place.
 Sanguhair was a Castle fair and strong.
 English Captain had done feil Scots wrong,
 it dwelt, and Bedford he was call'd,
 it held all west, from then to Douglas hald,
 the near of kin was Douglas wife and he,
 before he trowed in peace of him to be,
 Willim saw that Wallace rose in plain,
 d right likely to free Scotland again,
 help him part, into his mind he cast,
 in that life right long he could not last :
 thought no charge to break upon England,
 as through force that ever he made them band.
 young man then that hardy was and bald,
 n with himself, and Thomas Dickson call'd :
 or friend, he said. I would prove at my might,
 w make a fray to false Bedford the Kinght,
 Sanguhair dwels, and doth full great outrage.
 en Dickson said : My self in that voyage
 all for yon pass, with Anderson to speak,
 and ship to me my cousin will not break.

He

He is the man that fire leads them till,
Through his help we our purpose will fulfil.
Sir *VVilliam* then in all the haste he might,
Thirty true men in that voyage he dight,
And told his wife to *Dumfreis* he would fare,
A tryst, he said, of *England* he had there.
Thus passed he where that no *Sutheron* wist,
With these thirty through wast land at their list
While night came, then couched they full law,
Into a cleugh near at the water *Craw*.
To the *Sanguhair Dickson* alone he send,
And he soon made with *Anderson* this end:
Dickson should take both his horse and his weed
By it was day, a draught of wood to lead:
Again he past, and told the good *Dowglas*,
Which drew him soon into a private place.
Anderson told what stuff there was therein,
To *Thomas Dickson* that was right near of kin.
Fourty they are, all men of meikle vail,
Be they on foot, they will you sore assail,
If you happen the entry for to get,
On the right hand a stalwart axe is set,
Therewith you may defend thee in a throng:
Be *Dowglas* wise, he byde not from thee long.
Anderson yeed to the bushment in hy,
Near the Castle he drew them privily,
Into a shaw, *Sutheron* mistrusted nought,
To the next wood with *Dickson* soon he sought
Graithed a draught on a broad slipping law,
Charged an horse, and to the town can draw.
Arrayed he was in *Andersons* weed,
And bade have in, the Porter came good speed.

chap. 6. of Sir William Wallace. 285

his hour, he said, thou might have been away :
 mous thou arr, for it is scantly day.
 he gate yeed up, *Dickson* yeed in but nair,
 thortour band that all the draught up bare,
 e cutted it, the slip to ground could ga,
 mmered the gate, steiking they might not ma.
 the Porter soon he hint into that strife,
 wice through the head, and rest him of his life.
 the axe he got that *Anderson* of spake,
 and beckning made, therewith the bushmēt brake.
Douglas himself was foremost in the preass,
 over the wood entred ere he would cease:
 three watch-men was from the walls coming new
 Within the close the *Scots* men them slew,
 e any scry was raised in that stour,
Douglas had tane the gate of the great tower,
 an up the stair where that the Captain lay,
 On foot he got, and would have been away.
 Over late he was, *Douglas* strake up the door,
Newfurd he found in the midst of the floor,
 With a stiff sword to death he hath him dight,
 His men follwed fast, that worthy were and wight.
 The men they slew that were within these wanes,
 Then in the close they sembled all at anes :
 The house they took, and *Sutherland* put to dead,
 Got none but one with life out of that stead.
 For that the gate so long unsteiked was,
 This spy he fled, and to *Dunsdeer* can pass,
 Told that Captain that they had hapned so.
 Another he gart into the *Ennoch* go :
 And *Tyber* mure was warned of this case,
 And *Lochmabane* all sembled to this place.

The Countrey als. when they heard of such rh
 wold siedg *Dowglas*. & heght they should him
 When *Dowglas* wist that none did fromr them
 To sailie him he trow'd that they would shape
Dickson he sent upon a courser wight,
 To warn *Wallace* in all the haste he might
 In the *Lennox*. *Wallace* had tane the plain,
 With four hundred that were of meikle main:
Kilfyth Castle he thought to visit it,
 That *Ravindail* held, but true men let him wit
 That he was out that time in *Cumbernald*,
 Lord *Cumine* dwelt on tribute in that hald.
 When *Wallace* wist, he gart Earl *Malcome* ly,
 With two hundred the bushment near thereby
 To keep the house, that none should to it fare,
 He took the rest in the wood side near there:
 A scurriour set, to warn if he saw ought,
 Soon *Ravindail* came, of them he had no thoug
 When he was coming the two bushments betw
 The scurriour warned these cruel men and kee
 When Earl *Malcom* had barred them frō the pl
 No *Sutherland* yeed with life, they did that grac
 Part *Lennox* men they left, the house to ta,
 Oalpoiling then they would not tarry ma.
 To siede houses then *Wallace* would not byde
 Throughout the land in awfull wise they ride.
 Then *Linlithgow* they burnt into their gate,
 wher *Sutherland* dwelt, they made their biggings b
 The Peil they took, slew them that were ther
 Of *Sutherland* blood the *Scots* thought no sin.
 Then on the morn burnt *Dalkeith* in a gleid,
 Soon to a strenght to *Newbottle* they yeed:

that *Lawder* and *Christel* of *Setoun*,
 me from the *Bass* & burnt *Northberwick* town
 at *Englishmen* they should no succour get :
 whom they overtook they slew withouten let.
 to meet *Wallace*, they past in all their might,
 hundred men with them of arms bright :
 blyth meeting that time was them between,
 when *Earl Malcome* and *Wallace* hath them seen,
Thomas Dickson als met with good *Wallace*,
 which granted soon for to rescue *Douglas*.
Dickson, he said, wots thou of their multiplie ?
 three thousand men their power may not be.
Earl Malcom said: Thogh they were thousands five
 for this action, me think that we should strive.
 when *Hew the Hay* that dwelt under trewage,
 of *Englishmen* soon he gave over that wage :
 to e for to pay as then he liked nought :
 with fifty men to *Wallace* forth he sought,
 to *Piebles* fast, but no *Sutheron* them bade,
 here at the *Cross* a plaincry they made :
Wallace commanded, who wold come to his peace
 and byde thereat, reward should have but leese.
 good *Rutherford* that ever true hath been,
Etrick wood against the *Sutheron* keen,
 when he had, and done them meikle dear.
 they he had of noble men of wear.
Wallace him welcomed that came in his supplie,
 with lordly fare, and *Christain*-like was he.
 when to array they went about the town,
 their number was six hundred of renown,
 birnes bright, all men of meikle vail,
 with glad hearts they passed through *Cliddisdale*

The sledge began, and to the *Sanguhair* set :
But tydings came, and made therein a let.
The *Sutheron* heard that *Wallace* was so near,
Through hasty fray the Host was all on stear :
No man was there would for another byde,
Putpose they took in *England* for to ryde.
Their Chiftain said : Since their King had befo
From *Wallace* fled, their causes was the more.
From south they sought, to bide it was great wr
Douglas as then was thus quite of their skaith.
In *Crawford* mure by then was good *Wallace*.
When men him told, that *Sutheron* upon case,
Were fled away, and durst not him abyde.
Three hundred then he choos with him to ryde
In light harness, and horse that they would wai
The Earl *Malcome* he bade bide with the stail,
To follow them, a back guard for to be,
To stuff the chase in all the haste bowned he :
Through *Durisdair* he took the gainest gate,
Right fain he would with *Sutheron* make debate
The plainest way above *Morton* they hold,
Ryding the hight, if that the *Sutheron* would
Them to persue, or turn to *Lochmabane*,
But heed thereto the *Englishmen* took nane,
Down right they held, graith guides could the
About *Closburn* *Wallace* approached near; (le
In yre he grew when they were in his sight ;
To them he sped, with will and all their might
On an outpart the *Scots* set that tide,
Seven score at ground they had soon at a side.
The *Sutheron* saw that it had hapned so,
Turn'd in again, some rescue for to sho :

chap. 6. of Sir William Wallace, 289

then they crowd best with good *Wallace* to stand
and *Malcome* came then right near at their hands,
the whole power took plain purpose to flee :
who were at ground, *Wallace* gart let them be,
upon the formost followed with all his might,
the Earl and his amongst the rest they light,
and all to death that unhorsed were that tide;
till the horse full freshly can they ride.
The hundred whole ere they past *Dalswyntown*;
on *Sutherland* side to ground there was brought down,
Scots horse many began to tyre.
Suppose their selves were fierce as any fire:
The flyers left both wood, waters and hill,
to take the plain, speedful they thought them till
great battel away full fast they rode,
to the strengths they thought to make no bode.
Near *Lochmabane* and *Ochter-house* they went,
side *Crochmad*, where fell *Sutherland* they shent,
till many horse that ridden had so lang,
and travelled sore, they might no farther gang;
John the Graham upon his feet was set,
and *Wallace* als lighted withouten let :
These two on foot amongst their enemies yeed,
none but horse might from them pass for speed
Englishmen so cruelly they fought,
till they over-took, again harmed us nought.
Wallace came a part of power new,
rested horse, that partly can persue :
The *Currie*, with good men of great vail,
and *Johnstoun* als that dwelt into *Eskdail*,
The *Kirkpatrick* was in that company,
The *Haliday* who sembled sturdily :

Q

Where

Where they entred the saylie was so fair,
Dead to the ground feil flyers down they bare.
Seven score were whole of new come men indee
The south party of them had meikle dread.
Wallace was horsed upon a courser wight,
That good *Currie* had brought into his sight :
To stuff the chase with the new Chevalry,
Commanded *Grahame*, and his good men for the
Together byde, and follow as they might.
Three Captains there full soon to death he dight
The rested horse so wonder well him bare,
Whom he over-took again rose never mair.
Raithly he rode, and wrought full many wound
These three Captains he sticket in one stound,
Of *Durisdair*, *Ennoch*, and *Tybers-mure*.
Lord *Cliffords* Eme away to *Carlisle* sure,
The which before had keeped *Lochmabane* :
No landed man scaped with him but ane :
For *Maxwel* als out of *Carlaverock* drew,
On the *Sutherland* the gainest way can sue :
Into the chate so wilfully they ryde,
Few got away that came upon that side,
Beside *Cock-pool* full feil fighting they fand,
Some drowned were, some slain upon the land,
Who scaped was, in *England* fled away.
Wallace returned, no prisoner took they.
In *Carlaverock* that night resting they made,
Upon the morn to *Dumfries* blythly rade :
There *Wallace* cryed, who would come to his pe
Against *Sutherland*, their malice for to cease :
To true *Scots* he ordained warison,
Who faulted had, he granted remission,

Dumfreis then he would no longer byde,
 he *Sutheron* fled off *Scotland* on each side,
 sea and land, without longer abade.
 Castles and towns *Wallace* Chifcains made,
 ruled the Land, and put it in good rest,
 with true keepers, the which he trusted best.
 the good *Dowglas*, of which I told you air,
 keeper he was from *Drumlanrick* to *Aire* :
 because he had no *Sutheron* such thing wrought,
 his wife was wroth, but that she shewed nought,
 under covert her malice held perfyte :
 serpent waits her time when she may byte :
Dowglas oft she wrought full meikle care,
 that as now I leave while further mair.
Sutheron men durst then no Castles hold,
 they left *Scotland*, before as I you told,
 we one *Morton*, a Captain fierce and fell,
 that held *Dundie* : but *Wallace* would not dwell,
 thither past, and laid it round about.
 then *Morton* saw that he was in that doubt,
 asked leave with their lives for to go.
Wallace denyed, and said : It bees not so,
 the last Captain of *England* that here was,
 we him leave whole with his men to pass :
 you shalt forethink such mastery for to make,
England shall of thee Example take :
 with men I weind from thine for to have worn,
 you shalt be hanged, suppose the King had sworn
 gart command, no *Scots* should to him speak :
 affirmed the sledge, and said : We shal us wreak
Englishmen, asskil will of *Dundie*.
Wingecour he made their Constable for to be.

One *Ballinger* of *England* that was there,
Past out of *Tay*, and came to *Lubitbie* fair,
To *London* sent, and told of all this case,
To hang *Morton* so vowed had *Wallace* :
Before this time *Edward* with power yeed
To war on *France*, for then he had no dread:
Before he crowed *Scotland* to be his own.
When they him warned his men were overthrow
Again he took to *England* hastily,
And left his turn all fickle in folly.
Gascoign he claimed all into heritage,
He left it thus with all his hie barnage :
And *Flanders* als he thought to take in hand,
All these he left, and came to reave *Scotland*.
When that this King to *England* was come ham
Summonds they made, & charged *Bruce* by nam
And other mo that lived under his Crown,
Bishop and Barron, to come at his summon.
When *Wallace* twise throgh force had fred *Scotla*
This tyrant King took plainly upon hand :
For grezt desire he might no way take rest :
He thought to him to make it plain conquest,
In covetise he had reigned so long,
Chistains he made that they should not go wron
Cuides they chose for strengths them to guy,
They thought no more to byde at jeopardy,
In plain battel that they might *Wallace* win,
He crow'd for war they would no more begin.
Leave I this King making his ordinance,
My purpose is to speak something of *France* :
The *Englishmen* then *Guyen* held in wear,
To *French* folk they did full meikle dear.

King and Counsel soon in their wits cast,
To get *Wallace*, them thought it was the best:
For *Guyen* land the *Englishmen* had they,
Then shup they thus, in all the haste they may :
For they traisted, if *Scotland* were hard stade,
Wallace would come, as he them promise made.
The samine *Herauld* that in *Scotland* was,
They him commanded, and ordained him to pass
Into *Scotland* without longer delay,
Out of the *Sluce* as goodly as he may :
Ready he was, in ship he past on case,
In *Tayes* mouth, but bode the haven taie,
Where *Wallace* then was at the saylie still,
And he received the *Herauld* with good will :
Their writ he read, and said to them this wise :
An answer soon he could them not devise.
To honest *Innes* the *Herauld* soon he send,
On *Wallace* cost, right boldly for to spend,
While time he saw how other matters stood,
Then answer he should have withoutten dread.
The wit of *France* thought *Wallace* to commend,
Into *Scotland* with this *Herauld* they send,
Praise of his deed, and the description,
Of him tane there, by men of discretion,
Clerks, Knights, and *Heraulds* that him saw :
But I hereof cannot rehearse it aw.
Wallace stature, of greatness and of hight,
Was judged thus by discretion of sight,
That saw him both on chevel and on weed :
Nine quarters large of hight he was indeed,
Third part that length in shoulders broad was he,
Right seemly strong, and lusty for to see ;

In limbs great, with stalwart pass and sound :
His brands hard, with arms long and round ;
His hands made right like to a palmear,
Of manlike make, with nails long and clear :
Proportioned fair and long was his visage :
Right sad of speech, and able of courage ;
Both breast high, with sturdy craig and great ;
His lips round, his nose square and neat ;
Burning brown hair on browes and bries light ;
Clear asper eyes, like diamonds full bright,
Under his chin, on his left side was seen,
By hurt, a wan ; his colour was sanguine.
Wounds he had in many diverse place ;
But fair and whole well keeped was his face ;
Of riches als he keeped no proper thing,
Gave that he wan, like *Alexander* the King ;
In time of peace meek as a minde should be,
When war approached, the right *Heffor* was he,
To *Scots*-men right good credence he gave,
But known enemies they could not him deceive ;
These properties were judged into *France*,
Of him to be a goodly remembrance.
Master *John Blair* this pattern could receive ;
In *Wallace* Book he brieved with the lave :
But he thereof as then took little heed,
His laborous minde was all of other deed.
At *Dundie* sledge thus earnest as he lay,
Tydings to him *Top* brought upon a day,
How King *Edward* with likely men of vail,
An hundred thousand came for to assail,
And *Scots* ground they had tane upon case :
Into some part it grieved good *Wallace* ;

He made *Scrimgeor* at his house for to ly,
 With eight thousand, and charged them for thy,
 That none should scape with life out of that stead,
 That *Sutheron* were, but put them all to dead.
Scrimgeor granted right faithfully to byde.
 With two thousand *Wallace* could from him ryde;
 To Saint *Johnstoun* three dayes graiched he there,
 With sad advice towards the South can fare,
 For King *Edward* that time ordained had.
 Ten thousand whole to passe that was full glad:
 With young *Woodstock*, a Lord of meikle might,
 At *Striviling* Bridge he ordained them full right;
 And there to byde, the entry for to weir,
 Of *Wallace* then he crowed to have no deir.
 Right royally upon a good array,
 Then leave they took, and past out but delay.
 To *Striviling* came, and there would not abide,
 To see the North beyond *Forth* can they ride.
 Such new courage fell into his intent.
 Which made the *Sutheron* full sore for to repent;
The end of the Tenth Book.



THE ELEVENTH BOOK,

CHAP. I.

The Battel of Faw Kirk.

THis *Woodstock* rode into the North good
 speed,
 Of *Scots* as then they had but little dread;
 For well they trowed for to rescue *Dundee*.
 Their ships came to *Tay* in by the sea.

His guides said, that they should lead him by
Saint *Johnstoun* where passage lay plainly.
The high they took, and looked them about,
So were they ware of *Wallace* and his rout :
Then in some part he remorded his thought,
The Kings command because he kepted nought
But when he saw they were fewer nor he,
He would them byde, and either do or die.
Sir *John Ramsay* formost his power saw :
Said : Yon are they that ye see hither draw,
Either *Sutherland* that come so cruelly,
Or Earl *Malcome* to seek you for supply.
Then *Wallace* smiled, and said : *English* they are
Ye may them know right wel where that they fare
On *Sheriff-mure Wallace* the field hath tane,
With eight thousand of worthy men in wane.
The *Sutherland* were right doughty into deed,
Together strake well stuffed in steel weed :
Then spears soon all into splenders sprent,
The hardy *Scots* out through the *Sutherland* went
In rayed battel seven thousand down they bare,
Dead on the bent, recovered never mair.
Right feil fighting with weapons grounden keen,
Blood then from birnes was blushed on the green
The stalwart stout right fellow was and strang,
The worthy *Scots* so derfly on them dang,
That all was dead within a little stound :
None from that place had power for to found.
Young *Woodstock* hath both life and Host forlorn.
The *Scots* spoiled all good gear them befor.
What them thought best, of fine harness they wair
Both gold and good, and horse that might avail.

Striviling bridge without resting they rade,
 mo should come, *Wallace* this ordinance ma'e
 over the bridge, *Wallace* gart wrights call,
 d with crafts-men undid the passage all:
 en these same folk he sent to the *Dripfurd*,
 t set the ground with strong stakes and burde,
 th nine or ten syles he cast the gate before,
 along the shald made it as deep as shore.
 en *Wallace* said: We shal on one side be,
 n King and I, but if he southward flee:
 sent *Lawder* which had in hand the *Bass*,
 along the coast, where any vessel was,
 d men with him that busily could look,
 each boat a boord or two they took:
 ps they burnt of strangers that were there.
 own and he to *Wallace* thus can fare;
 Striviling lay upon his purpose still,
 r *Englishmen* to see what way they will.
 he Earl *Malcome Striviling* in keeping had.
 o him came with men of arms sad,
 ree hundred whole that ficker was and true,
 f *Lennox* folk, their power to renew.
 o *John* the *Graham* from *Dundaff* fickerly,
 o *Wallace* came with a good Chevalry,
 ydings him brought that *Sutheron* came at hand
 Torphichine King *Edward* was lodge and,
 estroying the place of purveyance was there;
 int *Johns* good as then they woul I not spare.
 ewarr of *Bute* came unto *Wallace* there,
 With him he had twelve hundred men and mair:
 he *Cumming* then was past in *Cumbernald*.
 pon the morn bowned the *Stewart* bald,

Soon to array with men of arms bright :
Twenty thousand then ssembled in their fight.
The Lord Stewart and Cumming forth they ride
To the *Faw Kirk*, and thought there to abide.
Wallace and his then to array they yeed,
With ten thousand of worthy men indeed :
Who could behold his awful Lordly vult,
So well beseen, so forward, stern and stout,
So good Chifcain as with so few they been,
Without a King was never in *Scotland* seen.
Wallace himself and Earl *Malcome* the Lord,
Sir *John* the *Graham*, and *Ramsay* at record,
Setoun, *Lawder*, and *Boyd* that was full wight :
Adam Wallace was to that journey dight :
And many other that proved will in preas,
Their names all I may not here rehearse.
Sutherland or then out of *Torphichine* fure,
Their passage made into *Slamanane* mure :
Into a plain set tents and pavilions,
South the *Faw Kirk* a little above the town,
Good *Jop* himself thus judged by his sight,
In whole number an hundred thousand right.
Of *Wallace* coming the *Scots* such comfort took,
When they him saw, all dreadour they forsook :
For of envy was few there that it wist,
Treasonable folk their matter works at list :
Poyson since then at the *Faw Kirk* is call'd,
Through great treason, and corruption of ald.
For *Cummings* had envie of good *Wallace*,
For Earl *Patrick*, as hapned upon case :
Countess of *March*, was *Cummings* sister dear,
Under colour he wrought on this manner,

to the Host had ordained *Wallace* dead,
 and made *Stewart* to fall with him at plead.
 That Lord, he said : That *Wallace* had no right
 power to lead, and be present in fight :
 he bade him take the vanguard for the gy,
 so wilt he well that he should strive for thy.
 Lord *Stewart* asked of *Wallace* his counsel,
 said, Sir, ye know what may us best avail :
 on awful King is fellow for to byde.
 Right unabased *Wallace* answered that tyde :
 and I have seen twise mo into *Scotland*,
 With yon same King when *Scots-men* took on hand
 With fewer men then now hither is sought,
 this Realm against, and to good purpose brought,
 it, well fight, for we have men enew,
 as for a day, so that we all be true.
 The *Stewart* said : The vanguard we should have,
Wallace answered, and said : So God me save,
 that shal ye not, so long as I may reign,
 For no man else, except my righteous King :
 if he will come, and take on him the Crown,
 at his command I shall be ready bown.
 Through Gods grace I rescued *Scotland* twise,
 were over mad to tine it in such wise,
 to tine for boast that I have governed lang,
 thus half in wrath from-ward him can he gang.
Stewart therewith all bowned into bail.
Wallace, he said, by thee I tell a tale.
 say forth, quoth he, of the fairest ye can.
 Unhappily his tale thus he began.
Wallace, he said, thou takes this meikle cure;
 So fared it by working of nature,

How an Howlat complained of his fettherem,
When Dame Nature took of each bird but blame
A fair feather, and to the Howlat gave,
Then he through pride rebuted all the lave:
Wherefore should thou thy senyie show so hie,
Thou thinks none here that should thy fellow be
This makes it, thou art clad with our men:
Had we our own, thine were but few to ken.
At these words good *Wallace* burnt as fire,
Over hastily he answered him in ire:
Thou lied, he said, the sooth full oft hath been,
There have I bidden, where thou durst not be seen
Contrare thine enemies, no more for *Scotlands* right
Nor dare the Howlat when that the day is light
That tale full near thou hast told by thy sell:
To thy desire thou shalt not me compell:
Cumming it is hath given thee this counsel,
Wilt God ye shall of your first purpose fail:
That false traitor that I from danger brought,
Is wonder like to bring this Realm to nought:
For thine oggart either to do or die,
To prison fled, or cowardly to flee:
Rescue of me thou shalt get none this day,
Therewith he turned, and from them rode his way
Ten thousand men away with *Wallace* rode,
None better was in all the world so broad,
As such men was living upon life.
Alace, great harm fell *Scotland* for that strife:
Past to the wood from the *Faw Kirk* by east:
He would not bide for command nor request,
For charge of none, but it had been the King,
That might that time bring him from his etling.

the other Scots law their destruction,
 the discomfort to leave the field was bown:
 that these men was native to Stewart,
 principal in Bute, took hardiment in heart.
 and Stewart was at Cumming grieved there,
 might and he lived, he should repent it fair.
 the great trespass that he through misknowledge
 had gart him make to Wallace in that place.
 their debate it was a great pitie,
 the Englishmen then might no blyther be,
 fisted so fast in battel to the field,
 thirty thousand that well could weapons wield:
 the Earl Hartford was chosen their Chiftain,
 the good Stewart to that array is gane,
 the field he took as true and worthy Knight:
 the Englishmen came on with full great might,
 their fell meeting was awfull for to see,
 that counter they gart feil Sutherland die.
 then spears were split, hint out with swords soon,
 neither side full doughty deeds were done.
 all on the ground was felled in that place,
 Stewart and his can on their enemies race.
 blood bursted out through mailzie birnisch bright,
 every thousand with dreadfull weapons dight,
 the Sutherland men derfly to death they ding,
 the remanent again fled to the King.
 then thousand then after the dead eschewed,
 with that Chiftain unto the Host relieved,
 again to ray the hardy Stewart yeed.
 then Wallace law that worthy noble deed,
 held up his hands with humble prayer prest:
 O God, he said, give yon Lord grace to last,

And power have his worship to attend,
To win these folk, and take the whole commen
Great harm it were that he should be overset,
With new power they then to him rebet.
By that the *Bruce* an awfull Battel rayed,
The Bishop *Beik* that oft hath been assayed,
Fourty thousand upon the *Scots* to fare,
With full effear they raised up right there,
The *Bruces* banner with gold and goules clear.
When *Wallace* saw the battels approached near,
The right Lyon against his own Kintike :
Alace, he said, the world is contrare like.
This Land should be yon tyrants heritage,
That cometh thus to stroy his own barnage :
So I were free of it that I said air,
I would forswear *Scotland* for evermair :
Contrare *Bruce* I should rescue them now,
Or die therefore, to God I make a vow.
The great debate in *Wallace* wit can waid,
Betwixt kindnesse and wilfull vow was made.
Kindnesse bade him rescue them from their fo.
Then will said, Nay, why fool, wilt thou do so ?
Thou hast no wit with right thy self to lead :
Should thou help him that wold put thee to dea
Kindnesse said, yet they are good *Scots* men.
The will said, wit the verity thou may ken,
Had they been good, all in one we had been,
By reason here the contrare well is seen,
For they us hate more then the *Sutheron* lied.
Kindnesse said, Nay, that show they not indeed
Though one of them be false into their saw,
Because of him thou shouldst not lose them aw

they have done well into yon fellow stour,
 rescue them now, and take the high honour:
 Will said, they would have rest from me my life,
 made for them in many a fellow strife.
 Andnesse said, help, their power is but nought,
 then wreak on him that all the malice wrought,
 Will said, this day they shall not holpen be:
 That I have said, shall ay be said for me:
 They are but dead, God grant them of his blisse:
 How long since hath done great harm and misse,
 Wallace therewith turned in ire and teen,
 Tears for bail burst out from both his een.
 He took the Graham, and many other wight,
 Kept for wo for sorrow of that Knight.
 Then Bruces battel upon the Scots strake,
 Their cruel coming made cowards for to quake.
 Lord Cumming fled in Cumbernald away:
 About the Scots the Sutheron lapped they.
 The men of Bute before their Lord they stood,
 Defending him, when that fell streams of blood
 Were them about in floats where they yeed.
 Bathed in blood was Bruces sword and weed,
 Through fell slaughter of fell men of his own,
 Down to the death the Scots were overthrown,
 Then slew the Lord, for he would not be tane.
 Then Wallace saw that their good men were gane,
 Words, he said, what now is your counsel?
 Two choises there are, I rede the best ye wail,
 Under the King his Host abandounand,
 With Bruce and Beik in yon battel to stand,
 On King in war right wise and fell hath been,
 Their Captains als full cruel are and keen,

Better of hand is not living, I wish,
In tyranny, ye trow me well of this,
Nor *Bruce* and *Beik*, to what side they be set:
We have a choise which is full hard but let:
And we turn East for strength in *Lomthian* land,
They stuff a chase right hard I understand:
Take we the mure yon King is us before,
There is but this withoutten words more,
To the *Torwood*, for our succour is there:
Through *Bruces* Host, forsooth first must we fare
Amongst us now there needeth no debate,
Yon men are dead, we need not strive for state.
They all consented to work right as he will:
What him thought best, they granted to fulfill.
Good *Wallace* then that stoutly could them stie
Before them rode into his armour clear,
Ruled their spears all in one number round,
And we grace have for to pass through them found
And few be lost; to our strength will we ride,
Want we many, in faith we shall abide.
With their armed horse fast on the Host they rad
The rierd then rose when spears in sunder glade,
Dushed in drosse dunted with spears dint,
From forged steel the fire flew forth but stint:
The fellon throng when horie and men renewed,
Up drove the dust where they their piths proved
The other Host might not their deeds see,
The flour that rose, while they dislevered be.
The worthy *Scots* eight thousand down they bare
Few fel on ground that good *Wallace* broght there
The King cryed, Horse upon them for to ride:
But this wise Lord gave him counsel to bide.

The Earl of York said, Sir, ye work amisse,
 to break array, yon men quite through them is :
 they ken the Land, and will to strengths draw,
 like we the plain we are in peril aw.
 The King conceived that his counsel was right,
 ruled the Host, and bade still in their sight.
 The Bruce and Beik might return their battel;
 the Scots were through, and had a great avail.
 Wallace commanded the Host should passe away
 to the Torwood, in all the haste they may :
 himself and Graham, and Lawder turned in,
 betwixt battels, pryse and proves to win,
 and with them bode in that place hundred three
 of Westland men used in jeopardie,
 upon wight horse, that right warly could ride,
 stop they made where they set on a side :
 no spears they had but swords of tempered steel,
 therewith in stour they let their enemies feel,
 now they full oft had proved been in preasse,
 of Englishmen they made feill to decease.
 The Bruce thereof might well perceiving have,
 three hundred there were graithed to their grave
 the hardy Bruce an Host abandone it,
 thirty thousand he ruled by force and wit,
 upon the Scots, his men for to rescue,
 served they were with good spears anew.
 And Bishop Beik a stuff to him to be,
 When good Wallace their ordinance can see,
 place, he said, yon man hath meikle might,
 and over good will to undo his own right.
 He bade his men toward the Host to ride,
 them for to save he would behinde them bide;
 Meikle

Meikle he trowed in God, and his own deed,
To save his men into his doughty weed :
Upon himself meikle travel he taes,
The great battel compleat upon him gaes :
In the fore-front turned he full oft,
Whom ever he hit, their saughning was unsoft :
That day in world known was not his maik,
A *Sutherland* man he slew ay at one straik.
But his own strength might not against them be
Toward his Host behoved him to flee.
The *Bruce* him hurt at his returning there,
Under the haunch, a deep wound and fair;
Blood bursted out braithly a spears length.
From the great Host he fled towards his strength
Such a flyer before was never seen,
Nought as *Gaderis* of *Gaudiffer* the teen,
When *Alexander* rescued the fourcours,
Might not to him be compared in those hours.
The feil turning of fourcours he made;
How boldly as before the Host he bade.
Nor how good *Graham* with cruel hardiment,
Nor how *Lawder* amongst his enemies went :
How they alone into the stour then stood,
While *Wallace* was in staunching of his blood.
By then he had stemed full well his wound,
With three hundred unto the field can found,
To rescue *Graham* and *Lawder* that were wight
But Bishop *Baik* came on with strength and flight
The worthy *Scots* retired far aback,
Seven aiker broad, unto their own great wrack
Yet were those two delivered there full well,
By his own hand, and a good sword of steel.

the awful *Bruce* amongst them with great main,
 the rescue three *Scots* men hath he slain :
 from he hit right ay at one straik was dead :
Wallace preassed in therefore to set remead,
 with a good spear *Bruce* was served but bade,
 with great envy to *Wallace* fast he rade,
 and he to him assonziet not for thy,
 the *Bruce* him mist, as *Wallace* passed by,
 with a sword he strake with his sharp grounden glave,
 ear and horse neck he all in sunder drave.
Bruce was at ground ere *Wallace* turned about,
 the great battel of *Sutherland* stern and stout,
 they horsed *Bruce* with men of great valour :
Wallace alone was in that stalwart stour.
Graham pressed in and strake an *English* Knight,
 fore the *Bruce* upon the basnet right.
 at frivole stuff, and all his other weed,
 with bone and brain the noblesword through yeed :
 the Knight was dead, good *Graham* returned right.
 subtil Knight thereat had great despight,
 slowd at wait, and hath perceived well,
Grahams birny too narrow was some deal
 beneath the waste, that close it might not be,
 in the fillet full sternly then strake he,
 pierced the back, in the bowels him bare,
 with a sharp spear, that he might live na mare.
Graham turned ther and smote the Knight in teen
 through the visart a little beneath the een :
 dead of that dint, to ground he rushed down,
John the *Graham* swowned on his arfoun,
 ere he overcame to passe to his party,
 all *Sutherland* men that were on foot him by,

Sticked

Sticked his horse that he no further yeed :
Graham yeelds to God his good spirit & his d
when *Wallace* saw this good knight to death bro
The piteous pain' so sore thirled his thought,
All out of kind altered his courage,
His wit in war was then but a wood rage.
The horse him bare in field where so him list,
For of himself as then he little wist.
Like a wood beast that was from reason rent,
As witless wight into the Host he went,
Dinging on hard, what *Sutheron* right he hit,
Straight upon horse again might never sit.
Into that rage full feil folk he dung down,
All him about was red a full great rowm.
When *Bruce* perceived with *Wallace* it was sa,
He then charged him long spears for to ta,
And slay his horse, so he could not escape.
Feil *Sutheron* then to *Wallace* can them shap
Pierced his horse with spears in either side,
Wounds they made that were both deep & wi
Of shafts, part *Wallace* in sunder share,
But feil heads into his horse left there.
Some wit again to *Wallace* can redown,
In his own mind, so ruled him reasoun :
So for to die, he thought no vassalage.
Then for to flee he took into a rage,
Spurred the horse, and ran in a randown
To his own folk were byding on *Carroun*.
The sea was in, they stopped and still stood :
On loud he cryed, and bade them take the flood
Together byde, ye may not loose a man.
At his command they took the water than.

returned the entry for to keep,
 while all the Host were passed over the deep :
 then followed fast, and dread his horse should fail,
 himself was clad in a heavy plate of mail.
 though he could swim, he trow'd he might not wel
 the clear water cooled the horse some deal.
 at over the flood he bare him to the land,
 then fell down dead, and might no longer stand,
 fairly full soon a courser to him brought,
 then up he lap, amongst the Host he sought :
 abam was away, and other fifteen wight,
 on Magdalen day these folk to death were dight
 thirty thousand of *Englishmen* for true,
 the worthy *Scots* upon that day they flew :
 that by *Stewart*, and then by wight *Wallace*,
 for all his price King *Edward* rewed that case.
 to the *Torwood* he bade the Host go ride,
 fairly and he passed on *Carron* side,
 holding over upon the south party.
 Bruce formost came, and could on *Wallace* cry :
 that ? art thou there ? A man, *Wallace* can say.
 the *Bruce* answered : that hast thou proved this
 side, he said, thou needest not to flee. (day
Wallace answered : I eschewed not for thee :
 at that thy power hath near thine own undone,
 mends hereof, wil *God*, we shal have soon.
 language of thee, the *Bruce* saith, I desyre.
 ay forth, quoth he, thou mayest for little hyre :
 yde from thine Host, & gar them byde with *Bick* :
 would fain hear what thou likest to speak.
 the Host bode still, the *Bruce* passed them fra,
 no man with him, but one *Scot* that heght *Rae*.

When

When that the *Bruce* out of their hearing were
He turned in hy, and this question can speare:
Why workest thou thus, & might in good peare
Then *Wallace* said: But in default of thee:
Through thy falsehood thine own wit is misken
I claim to right, but would this Land defend,
That thou undoest through thy false cruel deed
Thou hast tint two that were with far more me
Upon this day, with a good King to found,
Nor five millions of finest gold so round,
That ever were wrought in work or coyn so bright
I trow in world be not a better Knight,
Then was good *Graham*, of truth and hardiment
Tears therewith from *Wallace* eyes down went.
Bruce said: Far more on this day we have lost
Wallace answered: Alace, they were ill cost,
Through thy treason (sholdst be our righteous king
That wilfully destroyest thine own off-spring.
The *Bruce* answered: Wilt thou do my devise
Wallace said: No, thou livest in such wise,
Thou wouldest me make at King *Edwards* will
Yet I had rather to morn be hanged hie.
But wilt thou do as I shal counsel give,
Then as a Lord thou might at liking live,
At thine own will in *Scotland* for to reign,
To be in peace, and hold of *Edward* King.
Of that false King I think never to take,
But contrare him with all my power to make:
I claim nothing as by tittle of right, (might
Though I might crave, since God hath lent me
From thee thy crown of this Region to wear;
But I shal not such charge upon me bear.

Great God knowes best what wars I took in hand,
 To keep free that which thou doest gain-stand
 Might be said of thee long time beforne,
 Cursed time thou wast for Scotland borne.
 Comest thou not, that never yet didst good?
 Thou runnagate, devourer of thy blood.
 Now to God, may I thy master be
 Any field, thou shalt far rather die
 Than shal a Turk, for thy false cruel wear:
 Agains to us do not so meikle deare.
 When leugh the *Bryce* at *Wallace* earnestness,
 And said: Thou seest that thus stands the case:
 This day thou art with power overset,
 Against yon King overhand ye may not get.
 When *Wallace* said: We are by meikle thing,
 Stronger this day in contrary yon King,
 Than at *Bigger*, where he left many of his,
 And als the field. so shal he do with this:
 Into the field we have lost many a Knight,
 Or die therefore, for all his meikle might,
 And *Scotland* now into such peril stad,
 To leave it thus, I might be called mad.
Wallace, he said, it approacheth near night,
 Would thou to morn when that the day is light,
 Ere nine of clock, meet me at the Chappel,
 By *Dunipace*, I would hear thy counsel.
Wallace said: Nay, ere that each time be spent,
 Were all the men hence in the Orient,
 Into one will with *Edward* who had sworn,
 We shall bargan ere nine hours of the morn:
 Of this wrong reaf, either he shal think shame,
 Or die therefore, or flee in *England* hame.

But

But and thou wilt, soon by the hour of three,
At that each tryft, will God, I shall thee see.
While I may last, this Realm shal not forfare.
Bruce promis'd him with twelve *Scots* to be the
Then *Wallace* said: Stood thou righteous to
A contrare part I should not be to thee.
I shal bring ten, and for thy power mo,
I give no force, though thou be freind or fo.
Thus they departed. *Bruce* passed thus away,
To *Lithgow* rode where that King *Edward* lay
The field had left, and lodged by south the tow
At supper set as *Bruce* at the pavilion,
He entred in, and saw vacand his seat,
No water took, but made him to the meat,
Fasting he was, and been in meikle dread.
Bloody was all his weapons and his weed.
The *Sutheran* Lords scorned on terms rude,
And said; behold yon *Scot* eats his own blood.
The King thought evil they made such derision,
Bade have water to *Bruce* of *Huntingtown*.
They bade him wash; he said, that he would nought
This blood is mine that hurts most my thought.
Sadly the *Bruce* then in his minde remorded,
The words sooth *Wallace* had him recorded;
Then rewed he sore, fra reaf, on he had known,
That blood and land should both have been
With them he was long ere he got away, (own
But contrare *Scots* he fought not from that day,
Leave I the *Bruce* sore mourning in his intent;
Good *Wallace* soon again to his Host went,
In the *Torwood* which had their lodging made,
Fires they beir that was both bright and brade.

of milt and sheep they took at suffisance,
 hereof full soon to get them sustenance.
 Wallace slept but short while and soon rose,
 to rule the Host on a good p^{re}ce he goes.
 the Earl *Malcome*, *Ramsay*, and *Lundie* wight,
 and five thousand in battel then he dight.
 Wallace, *Lawder*, and *Christel* of *Setown*,
 five thousand led, and *Wallace* of *Richartoun*,
 all well arrayed into their armour clean,
 to the field where that the chase had been,
 seeking dead men, amongst the worthiest (most)
 the corps of *Graham*, for whom they mourned
 When they him fand, & good *Wallace* him saw,
 he lighted down, him hint before them aw
 arms up, beholding his pale face,
 he kissed him, and cryed full oft: Alace!
 my best brother in world that ever I had:
 mine efold freind when I was hardest stid:
 mine hope, mine health, thou wast of most honour
 my faith, mine help, my strengthner into flour.
 in thee was wit, freedom, and hardiness:
 in thee was truth, manhood, and noblenesse:
 in thee was rule, in thee was governance:
 in thee vertue withoutten variance:
 in thee lawty, in thee was great largeness:
 in thee gentries, in thee was steadfastness:
 thou wast great cause of winning of *Scotland*,
 though I began and took the war in hand,
 I vow to God that hath the world to wald,
 my death shal be to *Sutheron* full dear sold:
 martyr thou art for *Scotland*'s right and me:
 shal be venged, or else therefore shal die.

Was no man there from weeping might refrain,
For loss of him, when they heard *Wallace* plain.
They carried him with worship and honour,
In the *Faw Kirk* made him a sepulchre.

Wallace commanded his men therefore to byde

His ten he took, for to meet *Bruce* they ryde :

South-west he past where that the tryst was set.

The *Bruce* full soon and good *Wallace* have met

For loss of *Graham*, and als for proper teen;

He grew in yre when he the *Bruce* hath seen.

Their saluting was but bousteous and thrown :

Rews thou, he said, thou art contrare thine own

Bruce said : *Wallace*, rebute me now no more,

Mine own deeds have bet me wondere sore.

When *Wallace* heard with *Bruce* that it stood

On knees he fell, fair countenance can him ma.

In arms soon the *Bruce* hath *Wallace* tane,

Out from their men in counsel are they gane :

I cannot tel perfectly their language,

But this was it their men had of knowledge :

Wallace him prayed: Come from the *Sutherland* kir

[The *Bruce* said : Nay, there lets me yet one thing

I am so bound with witness to be leal,

For all *England*, I would not false my seal.

But one thing here I heght to God and thee,

That contrare *Scots* again I shal not be :

Into a field with weapons that I bear,

In my purpose, I shal thee never dear :

If God thee grants over-hand of us to have,

I wil not flee mine own self for to save,

And *Edward* scape, I pass with him again,

But I through force be either tane or slain :

rain, speak he on me when that my tearm is out,
plain come to thee, may I scape from that doubt.
r, of their counsel I cannot tell you mair,
the *Bruce* took leave, and can to *Edward* fare?
byde *Wallace* in haste provided soon his Host,
yde: ght sad in minde for *Scots* men that he lost.
as set made *Crawford* the Earl *Malcome* to guide,
e met the low way to *Innerravin* to ride,
that their watches then should not them espy;
en: the other Host himself led hastily,
n: south *Manwel*, while that they were between;
e own the out-watches thus scaped they unseen.
ore, the Earl *Malcome* on *Lithgow* entred in,
ere hastily a great st rife can begin.
ood *Wallace* was nought all to the battel bown,
na. then they heard the cry rise into that town;
n *Edwards* Host they set full suddenly;
e: *Wallace* and his made little noyse and cry,
at occuppyed with weapons in that stour,
: il felled to death that was without armour;
on kil disarrayed the *English* Host was then,
e thing mongst the pavilions, where *Scots* ful many man
tuted down cords, gart many tents fall;
one sonzeit then, at once were fighting all;
ee, at *Wallace* Host & Earl *Malcome* with might.
ing *Edward* then with awful fear on hight,
ryed to array on *Bruce* so stern and stout.
twenty thousand in arms him about,
e, to harness had bidden all that night,
at frayed folk so dolefully been dight,
each side fled, for fearednets of their dead;
Wallace and his so roughly through them yeed,

Toward the King, and felled feil to ground.
Who bode them there right fell fighting the
The cruel King right awfully abade, (four
To all his folk a great comfort he made :
The worthy *Scots* amongst them in that flour,
Feil *Sutherland* flew into their fine armour :
Before the King made stops them among,
So forwardly they preassed in that throng.
English commons they fled on either side,
But noble men, there durst none other byde.
The *Bruce* as then to *Scots* made no grievance,
But judge he was with feinziet countenance :
So did he never into no battel air,
Nor yet after such deed as he showed there.
The Earl *Hartfurd* to flee he made him bown,
The Earl *Malcome* by that came in the town;
The *Lennox* men set their lodges on fire,
Then fearedly fled many *Sutherland* syre.
The King *Edward* that yet was fighting still,
Hath seen them flee, and liked them full ill.
The worthy *Scots* fast toward him they preass,
His bridle near assayed ere they would cease ;
His Banner-man in that place *Wallace* flew,
And then to ground the banner soon it flew.
The Earle of *York* counselled the King to flee,
And so returned, since no succour they see.
The *Englishmen* have seen the banner fall,
Without comfort to flee they purpose all.
Ten thousand men in field and town was dead,
Of *Edwards* folk, ere himself left that stead.
Twenty thousand away together rade,
King and Chistains no longer tarry made ;

he Scots in haste then to their horse they yeed,
 to stuff the chase with worthy men indeed.
 the Lennox folk that wanted horse and gear,
 took them at will to help them in their wear,
 at stragle rode, what Scots might formost pass,
 in Sutheron men full great slaughter there was;
 Wallace hath seen the Scots unorderedly
 follow the chase, he made masters in hy;
 them for to rule, and altogether ryde,
 commanding them, each one should other byde.
 to flying the Sutheron subtil are,
 he they a time, they will set on full fair.
 ail scailed folk to them will soon renew.
 or ye see well that they are men anew.
 he followers was ruled well with skil,
 in good array they rode all at his will,
 and flew down fast, what Sutheron they overtake,
 contrare the Scots came not mastery to make,
 into that chase they hasted all so near,
 to Englishmen durst from the Host out stear.
 the frayed folk at stragle were fleeand,
 drew to the King well mo then ten thousand.
 thirty thousand in number then were they,
 into array together they pist away.
 ail Scots horse so driven was in travel,
 fore-run that day, and irked began to fail;
 the Sutheron was with horse served so well,
 Of Wallace chase the Sutheron had some feel,
 Of horse they were purveyed in great wain,
 The King changed on sundry horse of Spain.
 Then Wallace said; Lords, ye may well see,
 Yon folk are now all that yon King may be,

For fault of stuff we lose over meikle thing ;
Had we good horle to pass before yon King,
We should make end of all this long debate,
Yet some of them shal be handled so heat ;
Part of our horse are holden fresh and wight,
Set on them fast while that we are in might ;
With that the *Scots* so hard amongst them drew
Of the outmost three thousand men they flew.
In *Crawfurd* mure many a man was slain.
Edward gart call the *Bruce* of meikle main ;
Then said he thus ; Good Earl of *Huntingtown*,
Yee see the *Scots* put many to confusion,
Would ye with men again on them relieve,
And mar them once, I shal while that I live,
Love you far more then any other Knight,
And for all this, shal put you in your right.
Then said the *Bruce* ; Sir, loose me of my band
And I shal turn, I heght you by my hand.
The King soon considered in his minde,
When he heard *Bruce* answer him in this kinde
From *Englishmen* the *Bruce* heart set is :
Then cast he this, how he should mend this mis-
And so he did in *England* at his will,
No *Scots*-man he let with *Bruce* byde still,
But where he past, held him in subjection,
Of *Englishmen* under a great bandon.
He turned not, nor no more language made,
In rayed battel the King to *Sulway* rade,
With meikle pain past upon *Englands* coast.
Fifty thousand in that travel they lost.
When *Wallace* saw he escaped was away,
Upon command again returned they,

To *Edinburgh*, withoutten words more,
 Put in *Crawfurd* that Captain was before,
 Of heritage he had in *Manwel* land.
Wallace commanded each man should hold in hand
 Their own Office, as they before time had,
 Put in good peace, *Scotland* in right he stad.
 On the tenth day to *Saint Johnstoun* he went,
 Assembled Lords then showed them his intent.
Scrimgeour came that then had won *Dundie*,
Wallace command that time well keeped he.
 He failed so while strong hunger them drave,
 Feebled them so, the house to him they gave.
 These wageours soon they put to confusion,
 Then brought *Morton*. to make a confusion,
 Before *Wallace*, and soon fra he him saw,
 He gart hang him for all King *Edwards* aw.
 Masons and minds with *Scrimgeour* forth he send,
 Cast down *Dundie*, and thereof made an end.
Wallace sadly when these deeds were done,
 The Lords he called, and his will show'd them soon.
 Good men, he said, I was your Governour,
 My minde was set to do you ay honour,
 And for to bring this Realm to righteousness:
 For it I past in many painful place.
 To win our own, my self I never spar'd,
 At the *Faw Kirk* they ordained me reward:
 Of their reward ye hear no more through me;
 Unto such gifts, God will full well have eye.
 Now ye are free, through the Maker of might,
 He grant you grace for to defend your right.
 Als I presume, if harm be ordain'd me,
 They are *Scots-men* which should the workers be

For fault of stuff we lose over meikle thing;
Had we good horse to pass before yon King,
We should make end of all this long debate,
Yet some of them shal be handled so heat;
Part of our horse are holden fresh and wight,
Set on them fast while that we are in might;
With that the *Scots* so hard amongst them drew
Of the outmost three thousand men they flew.
In *Crawford* mure many a man was slain.

Edward gart call the *Bruce* of meikle main;
Then said he thus; Good Earl of *Huntingtown*,
Yee see the *Scots* put many to confusion,
Would ye with men again on them relieve,
And mar them once, I shal while that I live,
Love you far more then any other Knight,
And for all this, shal put you in your right.
Then said the *Bruce*; Sir, loose me of my band
And I shal turn, I heght you by my hand.

The King soon considered in his minde,
When he heard *Bruce* answer him in this kinde,
From *Englishmen* the *Bruce* heart set is:
Then cast he this, how he should mend this mis,
And so he did in *England* at his will,
No *Scots*-man he let with *Bruce* byde still,
But where he past, held him in subjection,
Of *Englishmen* under a great bandon.

He turned not, nor no more language made,
In rayed battel the King to *Sulway* rade,
With meikle pain past upon *Englands* coast,
Fifty thousand in that travel they lost.

When *Wallace* saw he escaped was away,
Upon command again returned they,

To *Edinburgh*, withoutten words more,
 Put in *Crawford* that Captain was before,
 Of heritage he had in *Manwel* land.
Wallace commanded each man should hold in hand
 Their own Office, as they before time had,
 Put in good peace, *Scotland* in right he stad.
 On the tenth day to *Saint Johnstoun* he went,
 Assembled Lords then showed them his intent.
Scrimgeour came that then had won *Dundie*,
Wallace command that time well keeped he.
 He failed so while strong hunger them drave,
 Feebled them so, the house to him they gave.
 These wageours soon they put to confusion,
 Then brought *Morton*. to make a conclusion,
 Before *Wallace*, and soon fra he him saw,
 He gart hang him for all King *Edwards* aw.
 Masons and minds with *Scrimgeour* forth he send,
 Cast down *Dundie*, and thereof made an end.
Wallace sadly when these deeds were done,
 The Lords he called, and his will show'd them soon.
 Good men, he said, I was your Governour,
 My minde was set to do you ay honour,
 And for to bring this Realm to righteousness:
 For it I past in many painful place.
 To win our own, my self I never spar'd,
 At the *Faw Kirk* they ordained me reward:
 Of their reward ye hear no more through me;
 Unto such gifts, God will full well have eye.
 Now ye are free, through the Maker of might,
 He grant you grace for to defend your right.
 Als I presume, if harm be ordain'd me,
 They are *Scots*-men which should the workers be

I have enough of our old enemies strife :
Me thinks our own should not envy my life :
Mine Office here over plainly I resign :
I think no more to take on me such thing.
In *France* I will, and win my living there,
As now advised, and home to come no more.
Lords gain-stood, but all that helped nought,
For any there, he did as himself thought.
Bishop *Sinkler* was visited with sickness
Into *Dunkeld*, and then through *God's* grace,
He recovered when *Wallace* past away :
After the *Bruce* he lived many a day.
Good *Wallace* thus took leave in *Saint Johnston*
Eighteen with him to *Dundie* made them bown.
Longoveil past that doughty was indeed,
The *Barrons* son of *Brechin* with him yeed.
Two brethren old with their uncle them dight,
Symon Wallace, and *Richard* that were wight.
Sir Thomas Gray, this Priest can with him fare,
Edward Little, and *Iop*, and Master *Blair*.
Good *Keirly* past, had been with *Wallace* long,
And done full well in many fellow throng.
This *Keirly* then that could with *Wallace* fare,
Will Ker he heght, mine Author will declare :
Keirly in *Irish*, is but *Ker* [*Little*] call'd,
In *Carrick* he had heritage of ald :
His forbearer which worthy was of hand,
Saint David King him brought out of *Ireland* :
Then at *Dummoir* where first *Norways* came in
This *Ker* made great discomfice of their kin,
With seven hundred vanquisht nine thousand,
Some drowned in *Down*, some slain upon the Land

those whole lands the good King gave him till.
 Now Wallace past now further speak I will.

CHAP. II.

Now Wallace met with Iohn of Lyn upon the sea.

A Mong Merchants thus Wallace took the sea,

Pray we to God that he their helper be ;

they sailed forth by part of England shore,

to Humber-mouth when that they came before ;

out of the south a great red sail they see,

to the top three Leopards standing hie :

the Merchants then the sign when that they saw ;

coming so near, they were discomfort aw :

It well they wist that it was John of Lyn,

nots to slay he said it was no sin.

These frayed folk they yeed to confession.

Then Wallace said ; Such a devotion

yet saw I never, in no place where I past,

that for one ship ye should be all agast :

on wood cats shal do but little dear,

We saw them sail twise mo when they were,

on a fair field, so shal they on the sea.

Despite it is to see them stand so hie.

the stiers-men said : Sir, will ye understand,

we saveth none that is born of Scotland :

We may not flee from yon barge, wot I wel ;

Well stufed they are with gun and gainzie of steel ;

upon the sea yon Reaver long hath been,

so righteous men he doth full mekle teen :

light we be saved, we rek not for our good.

This use he hath, shortly for to conclude,

as flood he bears upon his coat armour,

and drowning folk, so painted in his figure.

Suppose we mourn, ye should have no marvel.
Then *Wallace* said : Here is men of more vail
To sail the ship, therefore in How thou ga,
And thy fires, no more cummer us ma.
Wallace and his then soon to harness yeed :
When they were graithed into their worthy weed
Himself and *Blair*, and the Knight *Longoveil*,
These three hath tane to keep the mid-ship well
Before were eight, and six be eft he kend :
Then two he chose the top for to defend.
And *Gray* he made their stiers-man for to be:
The Merchands then saw them so manfullie
Defend themselves, because they had no weed,
Out of the How they took then skins good speed
Ay betwixt two stuffed wool as they might best,
Against the stroak, that they might some part lest
Then *Wallace* leugh, and commended them aw,
Of such harness before he never saw,
By that the barge came on them wonder fast,
Seven score in her that were nothing agast:
When *John* of *Lyn* saw them in armour bright,
He leugh, and said these naughty words on hight
Yon glaiked *Scots* can us not understand :
They are but fools, and new come from the land
He cryed, strike : but none answer them made,
Blair with a bow shot fast withoutten bade :
Ere they clipped he shot but arrows three,
And at each shot he gart a reaver die.
The briggans then they bickered wonder fast,
Amongst the *Scots* with shot of guns cast,
And they again with spears headed well,
Feil wounds they made throug plaits of finest ste

Either other fastned with clippes so keen,
 A cruel counter was at that ship-boord seen :
 The derf shot drave as thick as hail shour,
 Lasted there well near the space of an hour.
 When shot was gone, the *Scots* great comfort had,
 At hand stroaks they were sikker and sad.
 The Merchants als with such things as they might,
 Proved full well in defence of their right.
 Wallace and his at near straiks when they see,
 With sharp swords they gart feil briggans die.
 They in the top so wightly wrought on hand,
 In the south top there might no reaver stand,
 All the mid-ship of reavers was made wast,
 That to giye over at point they were almost :
 Then *Iohn* of *Lyn* was right graitchly agast,
 He saw his folk about him failie fast,
 With eager will he would have been away,
 Bade winde the sail in all the haste they may :
 But from the *Scots* then might they not eskey,
 The ships so sore on either side they wey :
 They saw no thing that might be to them ease.
 Crawford on lost their sail burnt in a bliese.
 Ere *Iohn* of *Lyn* shaip for to leave that itead,
 Of his best men sixty were brought to dead.
 Their ship by ours a boord was more in hight :
 Wallace lap in amongst the reavers wight,
 A man he strak over ship-boord in the sea :
 On the over-last he slew soon other three.
 Longoveil entred, and als good Master Blair,
 They gave no grace to frieks that they found there
 Wallace himself with *Iohn* of *Lyn* hath met,
 At his collar a fellon straik him set,

Both helm and head from the shoulder he drave,
Blair over the boord in the sea cast the lave
Of his body, then all the remanand
Entred and slew the brigans that they fand:
The ship they took, both gold and other gear,
That those reavers had gathered long in wear,
But Master *Blair* spake nothing of himiel,
In deed of arms what eventure that befel.
Sir Thomas Gray was Priest then to *Wallace*,
Put in this hook how them hapned this case
That *Blair* was in, and many worthy deed,
Of which himself had no pleasance to read.
Wallace gart rule the ship with his own men,
And sailed forth the right course for to ken:
Into the *Sluce* haven while they entred be,
The Merchants well he helped in safety:
Of gold and gear they took part that they fand,
Gave them the ship, then passed to the land,
Through *Flanders* rode upon a goodly wise,
Entred *France*, and then past to *Paris*:
The glad tydings that to the King was brought
Of *VWallace* coming, it comfort all their thoughts
They trowed by him to get redress of wrong,
The *Sutheron* had in *Guyen* wrought so long,
The Peirs of *France* were at their Parliament:
The King commanded with true and whole intent
They should fore-see a Lordship for *VWallace*.
The Lords then all deemed of this case,
For *Guyen* was all whole out of their hand,
They thought it best for to give him that land:
For well they trowed he had wrought so before,
He should it win, or else to die therefore:

so of it they might no profit have,
 that was the cause that *Wallace* should it have:
 his decreet soon they shewed unto the King,
 pleased he was they made him such a thing.
 of *Guyen* thus, when *Wallace* had a feel,
 to land, he said, liked him half so well:
 by chance is thus for to be ay in wear,
 and *Englishmen* have done our Realm most dear.
 was well known my defence righteous there:
 might have I here, my comfort is the mair.
 thank you Lords, made such reward to me,
 our purpose is I should not idle be.
 the King bade him be Duke of *Guyen* land.
 to that command *Wallace* was gain-standand,
 because that land was hastily to conquish;
 his thought was ay to win it through God grace.
 but nevertheless the King had made him Knight,
 and gave him gold for to maintain his right;
 and then gave charge to all war-men in *France*,
 they should be whole at *Wallace* ordinance.
 and also of him he bade him arms to take:
Wallace forlook such changing for to make.
 since I began, I bore the red Lyon,
 and thinks to be ay true man to the Crown.
 think you, Sir, of this mighty reward,
 you men herefore shal not right long be spar'd;
 think to quite some part ye kythed on me,
 in your service, or else therefore to die.
 Good *Wallace* thought his time he would not waste
 unto the wars he graiched him in haste;
 All *Scottish* men that were into that Land,
 to him they sought with their fewty and band.

Longoveil als a great power can raise,
 In *Wallace* help this good Knight gladly gaes:
 Tenthousand whole of noble men they were,
 The broad banner display'd of *Scotland* there.
 These war-men soon upon *Guyen* they sure,
 Broke buildings down which had been stark an
Sutheron they slew against them made debate, (flur
 Brightly on broad they raised fires full hate.
Shemon they took that *Wallace* first had won,
 And slew all men of *Sutheron* there was found,
 Into that town *Wallace* his dwelling made,
 All thereabout he wan the Countrey brade.
 The worthy Duke of *Orleans* was Lord,
 Sembled his folk into a good accord,
 Twelve thousand then he had in armour bright,
 And thought to help good *Wallace* in his right.
 Leave I them thus, the Duke and *Wallace* baith
 And speak some part how *Scotland* took great skait

CHAP. III.

How Edward King of England came into *Scot*
 land, and made whole conquish thereof.

THe false envy, and the wicked treason
 Amongst themselves, brought feil to confusion
 The Knight *Vallange* in *Scotland* made repair
 The faise *Menteith* Sir *John* withoutten mair,
 Betwixt them two was made a private band,
 So on a day they met into *Annand*.
 Of the *Lennox* Sir *John* had great desire,
 Sir *Aymar* heght he should have it in hyre,
 To hold in fee, and other lands mo;
 Of King *Edward*, so he would passe him to.

as corded they, and then to *London* went :
 Edward was glad to hear that appointment.
 Menteith anone was bound to that fierce King,
 to further him in *Scotland* in all thing.
 Then passed home, and *Wallange* with him sure,
 while he was brought again over *Carlile* mure.
 King *Edward* then in ire and fierce outrage,
 by thirty dayes he raised his barnage,
 in *Scotland* past, and there no stopping fand :
 no Chiftein was that durst against him stand :
 for *Menteith* told they thocht to make *Bruce* king;
 all true *Scots* would be pleased of that thing :
 yet many fled, and durst not byde *Edward*,
 come into *Rosse*, and in the *Isles* past part.
 Bishop *Sinclar* again fled into *Bute*,
 With that fierce King he had no will to mure.
 Thus without straik the Castles of *Scotland*,
 King *Edward* hath tane into his own hand :
 Divided then to men that he would like, (rick:
 Strengths and towns to *Rosse*, through the King-
 Both height and vail obeyed whole his will ;
 That he commanded they purpos'd to fulfill.
 The Bishops all inclined to his Crown,
 Both temporal, and the Religion.
 The *Romane* books that then were in *Scotland*,
 He gart them bear to *Scoon*, where they them fand
 And but redeem they burnt them all each ane;
Salisbury use our Clerks then hath tane :
 The Lords he took that would not of him hold,
 In *England* sent the noble blood of old.
 Sir *William* long *Dowglas* to *London* send
 In strong prison, and there he made an end.

Earl Thomas als that Lord was of *Murray*,
And Lord *Frazer*, with him to pass away ;
Als *Hew* the *Hay*, and other heirs mo,
He gart *Valence* with him in *England* goe
No man was left all this main Land within,
From *Edwards* peace, known of any kin.
Setoun, and *Lawder* dwelt stil into the *Bass*,
With them *Lundie*, and men that worthy was.
The Earl *Malcome* and *Campbel* past but let
In *Bute*, succour with *Sinkler* for to get.
Sir *John Ramsay* and *Ruthwen* they fled North
To their cousin that Lord was of *Fillorth*.
He past with them through *Murray* lands right,
So found they there a gentle worthy Knight,
That *Clement* heght, ful cruel ay had been,
And fended well amongst their enemies keen.
He thought never at *Edwards* will to be,
Into his time he gart feil *Sutherland* die.
He led these Lords in *Ross* withoutten mair,
At the *Stockford* a strong strength bigged there;
Keeped it long right worthily by wear,
To their enemies they did full meikle dear.
Adam Wallace and *Lindesay* of *Craigie*,
Away they fled by night unto the sea;
And *Robert Boyd* that was both wise and wight,
Arran they took to fend them at their might ;
And *Corspatrick* into *Dumbar* dwelt still,
Fewty full soon he made King *Edward* till.
Abernethy, Lord *Soules* and *Cumming* als,
And *John* of *Lorn* that long time had been false;
Lord of *Brechin*, and many other ma,
At *Edwards* peace, for gifts that he them ga.

King of peace for twenty days set he,
 of Englishmen in Lorn, that men might see,
 again to declare: but of this cause, I wis,
 that all Scotland by conquest then was his.
 The Lords then, and good Bishop Sinkler,
 out of Bute then they made a Ballingair,
 to good Wallace told him the torment hail:
 then wrote they thus to get help of their bail.
 Our hope, our health, & our whole Governour
 Our goodly guide, our best Chiftain in flour.
 Our Lord, our love, our strength in righteous place
 for GOD's sake relieve us of this case,
 and take the Crown, to us it were kinder,
 to brook for ay, ere fierce Edward it bear.
 The writ he got, but yet suffer he would,
 for great falsehood that part him did of old.
 Meikle dolour it did him in his minde,
 Of their misfare, for true he was and kinde:
 He thought to take a mends of their great wrang,
 He answered not, but into war forth rang.
 Of King Edward yet more forth I will mell,
 in what wise that he could Scotland deal:
 in Saint Johnstoun the Earl of York he made
 Captain to be of all these Lands brade,
 from Tay to Dee, and under him Buttellar:
 His good-shyre had at Kinclevin ended there,
 His father als, Wallace had them both slain,
 Edward therefore made him a man of main.
 The Lord Bewmont into the North he send,
 These Lordships whole he gave them in commend
 To Striveling then from Saint Johnstoun he went,
 There to fulfil the lave of his intent.

The Lord Clifford he had then *Dowglas*-dail,
Ruler to be of the south marches bail :

All *Galloway* he gave *Cumming* in hand :
Wist none but God how long that state shold stand
With the gentle Lord Bishop *Lambertoun*,
Of Saint *Andrews* was *Dowglas* of renown .
Before that time young *James* wight and wise,
To him was come from the schools of *Paris*.

A private favour the Bishop to him bare;
But *Englishmen* were so great masters there,
He durst not well in plain show him kindnesse,
While on a day he took some hardinesse.

Dowglas he called, and can to *Striviling* fare,
Where King *Edward* was dealing lands there,
He profered him unto the Kings service,
To brook his own, fra he wist on this wise
Dowglas he was, then he forsook plainly,
Swears by Saint *George* he brooks no land of me
His father was in contrare of my Crown,
Therefore as now he hides in our prison.

To the Bishop none other answer he made,
But as he pleased dealt on their lands brade,
To the Lord *Soules* all whole the *Mers* gave he
And Captain als of *Berwick* for to be,
Oliphant then that he in *Striviling* fand,
When he him had he would not keep his band,
The which he made ere he him *Striviling* gave,
Deceitfully the King could him deceive,
Into *England* sent him in prison strong,
In great distresse he lived there full long :
When King *Edward* had dealt this Region,
His leave he took, to *England* made him bown,

out of *Striviling* southward as they can ryde.
Cumming hapned near hand the *Bruce* to byde.
 Thus said he: Sir, and ye can keep counsel,
 can you learn which may you best avail.
 The *Bruce* answered: What ever ye show to me,
 as for my part, shal well concealed be.
 Lord *Cumming* said: Sir, ye know not this thing,
 of all this Realm ye should be righteous King.
 Then said the *Bruce*: Suppose I righteous be,
 see no time to take such thing on me.
 I am holden into mine enemies hand,
 Under great oath when I came in *Scotland*.
 To part from him, for profit nor request,
 Nor for no strength, but if death me arrest:
 He heght again to give this Land to me:
 Now find I well it is but subtilty:
 For this thou sees he deals mine heritage
 To *Sutheron* part, and some to traitours wage.
 Then *Cumming* said: Will ye therefore con cord,
 Of my lands and ye like to be Lord,
 Ye shal them have for your right and the Crown;
 Or and ye like, Sir, for my varison,
 I shal you help with power at my might.
 The *Bruce* answered; I will not sell my right,
 But on this wise, what Lordship thou wouldst
 For thy supply, I heght thou shal it have. (crave,
 Come from yon king, Sir, with some jeopardie.
 Now *Edward* hath all *Galloway* given to me,
 My nevoy *Soules* that keeps *Barnick* town,
 At your command his power shal be bown;
 My nevoy als a man of meikle might,
 The Lord of *Lorn*, hath great rowm in the hight;
 My

My third nevoy a knight of great renown,
Will rise with us, of *Brechin* the Barron.
Then said the *Bruce*: Fell there so sore a chance
That we might get again *Wallace* from *France*,
By wit and force he could this *Kinrick* win:
Alace, we have been over lang in twin.
To that language *Cumming* made no record,
For old done deeds did in his mind remord.
The *Bruce* and he compleated forth their band,
Then that same night sealed it with their hand:
This ragment left the *Bruce* with *Cumming* ther
With *Edward* king in *England* home could fare,
And their remained while this ragment was know
Three years and more ere *Bruce* claimed his ow
Some men deems *Cumming* the ragment send,
Some men again the contrare doth defend.
None may say well that *Cumming* was fakeless,
Because his wife was *Edwards* cousenels:
He served death by right law of the King,
He recklessly miskeeped such a thing.
Had *Bruce* past by but bode to Saint *Johnstoun*,
By whole assent, and had received the Crown,
On *Cumming* then he might have done the law
He could not thole fra time that he him saw.
Thus *Scotland* left in hard perplexitie,
Of *Wallace* more in some part speak will we.

The end of the Eleventh Book.

TH



THE TWELFTH BOOK.

CHAP. I.

How Wallace conquest the land of Guyen, and how
he was made Lord thereof.

THe sore travel, the earnest business,
The fell labour he had in many place :
To win the land that the good King him
into his reign he would no *Sutheron* save. (gave,
in *Guyen* land *Wallace* was still at wear,
Of *Scotlands* loss it did his heart great dear :
Of true *Scots* in minde he had great pitie,
He thought to help, his time when he might see.
Of set battels five he discomfist hail,
With jeopardie and many strong assail :
Then they forsook, and durst not him abyde,
The *Sutheron* fled from thence on either side,
To *Burdeous* into great multiply :
The town they stuff with vitails by the sea.
All *Guyen* land *Wallace* took to his peace,
To *Burdeous* he past ere he would cease :
On out-biggings full great mastery he made,
Still twenty dayes at strong assailing bade :
Fortts and works that were without the town,
They brake and burnt, and put to confusion.
Hedges and alleyes by labour that was there,
Foiled and spoiled, they would no fruits spare.
The *Englishmen* made great defence again,
With shot and cast that meikle were of main;

Of guns they were, and ganzies stuffed well,
All artailzie and weapons of fine steel,
With men and meat within was busked been :
The great Captain was wise, cruel and keen,
Of *Glocester* the hudge Lord and heir :
The Earl had ay been used into weir,
Keeped his men by wit and hardiment,
Without the town there durst none from him
The land without was near wasted away, (went
War men so long into the Country lay :
In *Wallace* Host such scant was of victual,
They might not byde no longer to assail.
Then this wise Lord the Duke of *Orleans*,
To *Wallace* said : Sir, ye should know this chance
It stands over well with this false *Sutherland* blood
For on no wise can we now stop their food :
The haven they have, and ships at their will,
From *England* comes victual enough them till :
The Land is poor of victuall should us bield,
And ye see wel that they forsake the field.
Ye may with peace plenish these Lands wyde,
They will not fight though ye all yeare should
My counsel is in plain anent this thing, (byde
That ye would pass with worship to the King,
By his assent ye may at leasure wail,
With provision against them to assail.
Wallace inclined, and thanked this wise Lord,
Then they returned all with one good accord,
Past up in *France* with honour to the King,
And shew'd him the whole verity of this thing,
And he thereof in heart was wonder glad.
French-men before a hundred years not had

of *Guyen* half so meikle in their hand.
 tryng by then was new coming of *Scotland*,
 from part of Lords, and good Bishop *Sinkler*,
 sought this King into these tearms fair,
 of his gentrice, and of his goodly grace,
 for their supply to counsel goodly *Wallace*
 to come again, and bring them from bandon,
 and take to wear the Crown of that Region.
 his writ as then he would not to him shaw,
 right loath he was for friendship, feed, or aw,
Wallace should pass so soon from his presence:
 dwelling place he took for his residence,
Shemon still *VWallace* his dwelling made,
 and held about right liking lands brade.
 keen Captain then claimed in heritage
 office of it, and great lands into wage;
 therefore he thought good *Wallace* for to sta;
 under colour such mastery for to ma:
 long time he sought to get a day and place;
 and, he desired then service of *Wallace*.
 A tryst they set with fifteen on the side,
 hurry thereby he gart in bushment byde,
 of men in arms. When he with *VWallace* met,
 right awfully he bade them on him set.
 to armour had *VWallace* men in that place,
 but sword and knife they bore on them through
 part of his men left near a forest side: (case,
 right bousteously the Captain said that tyde,
 that *VWallace* held of his lands with unright.
 right soberly he said to that French Knight,
 have no lands but what the King gave me,
 by self therefore have been in jeopardie.

The Knight then said, Thy life shal be forlorn,
Or else that land, the contrare who had sworn
Aback he lap, and out a sword he drew,
The bushment broke when he that token shew
Good *Wallace* thought that matters stood
He gryped soon a shearing sword of steel, (we
And at one straik the Knight to death he draw
About sixteen then lapped all the lave.
Wallace and his so worthily have wrought,
Full feil they flew that forest on them sought
The knights brother that stalwart was and stra
And thoght they should be venged ere they ga
Of *Wallace* men some part he wounded sair.
Mowing there was into a meadow there,
Nine stout Carles, all servants to that Knight,
Sythes then they took, and ran in all their mig
To the fighters : ere they came near that place
But them perceived right well hath good *Wallace*
So awful thing of such we never saw :
Them to resist, himself can to them draw.
Into that stour left his men fighting still,
To meet these Carles that came with eager wil
The first let draw at *Wallace* with his syth,
Deliver he was, and high over-lap the syth.
An acward strack hit the Churle on the head,
Derfly on ground he hath him left for dead :
The other he met, over-lap the syth so keen,
On the shoulder als strake him in that teen,
Through all the cost the noble sword is share.
The third he met with a full awful fare,
The grounden syth at *Wallace* he let draw,
This good Chastain cleanly over-lap them aw :

With his good sword he made an hideous wound
 In him for dead, then on the fourth can found
 The right bone in great yre can him ta,
 Saved to coast right cruelly in twa :
 Three for most sythes this good *Wallace* over-lap,
 And four he slew, they saw such was his hap :
 Nay a man he slew at every each straik :
 The last fled first, thus can their power slaik.
 Wallace fast followed, and soon the fifth over-takes,
 To take him to death that no further he gaes :
 Then sped him soon unto his men again,
 Then they had the Knights brother slain,
 Five and six derfly to death were dight,
 Except seven men that fled out of their sight.
 The Mawers als that *Wallace* self with met,
 To *French*-men since no such tryst was set :
 Cause that they him brought to such a case,
 The King heard tell well scaped was *Wallace*,
 Sent for him soon, and prayed him to be
 Of his household, and live in good safetic :
 For well he saw they had him at envy.

Will with himself he gart him byde for thye
 Two years there *Wallace* with mirth abade,
 All into *France* many good journey made.
 The King him pleased in all his goodly main,
 From him he thought he should not part again,
 Lords and Ladies honoured him reverently,
 Ketches and shrews ay held him at envy,

CHAP. II.

How Wallace slew the two Champions.

Two Champions that time dwelt with the King,
 Had great despite at *Wallace* in all thing :

Q

Together

Together yeed ay these two Champions,
Of fellon force, and froward of conditions :
Right great despite they spake ay of *Scotland*,
While on a day it hapned upon hand,
Wallace and they were leaved them alone,
By adventure into an house of stone :
They used to bear no weapons in that hall,
They trowed therefore amils they might not fall
There communed they of *Scotland* scornfully.
Then *Wallace* said : Ye wrong us utterly :
Since we are bound in friendship to our King,
And he of us is pleased of all thing.
Als *Scots* men hath helped this Realm from drede
Me think ye should give good words for good dede
What may ye speak of our enemies but ill ;
In lightlines they made answer theretill,
And him despited in their language als.
Ye *Scots*, they said, have ever yet been false.
Wallace took one on the face in his teen,
With his good hand, while mouth, nose and een,
Through the braith blow, all gushed out of blood
Grossing to the ground he smote him where he stood
The other hint to *Wallace* in that stead, stood
For well he weind his fellow had been dead :
And he again in grief him gripped sore,
While his sprite fail'd, that he might do no more
The first freik rose, and smote on *Wallace* fast,
Both to the death he brought them at the last.
Upon a pillar their brains out he dang,
And with his hands out at the door them flang.
And said : What devil moved yon Carles at me ;
Long time in *France* I would have let them be.

rust well in truth, thus were they done to dead,
though *French*-men now likes not thereof to
as I will cease, and put it out of ryme, (read,
better it is, who right can look in tyme.

any great Lords was displeased in *France*;
at the good King who knew all the whole chance
right great despire of *Wallace* spoken had they:
his passed over, while that upon a day :
was none of them that durst it undertake,
he had done wrong, or therefore battel make;

CHAP. III.

How Wallace slew the Lyon in the Barrace.

His Royal Roy an high worship him gave,
As Conquerour him honoured over the lave;
fell Lyon this King gart be brought
Within barrace, for great harm that he wrought,
lized with yron, and no more power him gave :
of woodness he exceeded all the lave :
ug he was fair, and right fellow indeed,
that strong strength he gart men him feed,
eeped him close from men and bestial :
Court there dwelt two Squyers of great vail,
that cousins were to the Champions tway,
he which before *Wallace* hapned to slay,
band they made in privy conclusion,
their power to work his confusion,
y any means through fraud and subtiltie,
fter therefore they car'd not for to die,
o death or shame, so that they might him bring,
pon a tyme they went unto the King :
his *Scot*, they said, that ye so well fare make,
sees, nought here but he would undertake,

By his great force to put to confusion,
Now he desires to fight with your Lyon,
And bade us ask of you the battel strang,
Ye grant him leave in the barrace to gang.
Sadly again to them answered the King :
Sore me for-thinks he desires such a thing :
But I will neither for right, nor yet pleasance,
Deny *Wallace* what he desires in *France*.
Then went they forth, and soon met with *Wallace*.
A figured tale they told him in that case :
Wallace, they said, the King desires that ye,
Direnze battel so cruel for to see,
And charged you to fight with this Lyon.
Wallace answered in hasty conclusion :
And I shal do what be the Kings will,
At my power, right gladly to fulfil :
Then passed he unto the King but maire,
A Lord in Court when he approached there,
Unwisely asked without provision :
Wallace, dare ye go fight with our Loyn.
And he said : Yea, so the King suffer me,
Or with your self, if ye ought better be.
What will ye more ? this thing admitted was,
That *Wallace* should unto the Lyon pass.
The King charged to bring him good harness :
And he said : Nay, God shield me from such case,
I should it take if I fought with a man ;
But for a dog that nought of arms can,
I will have none, but single as I ga :
A great mantle about his hand can ca,
A good sword, with him he took no maire,
Abundantly in barrace entred there.

great chains were wrought in the gate with a gin;
 and pulled too, when *Wallace* was therein.
 In the wood Lyon on *Wallace* where he stood,
 stamping he brayed. for he desired blood:
 With his round polles in the mantle wrought sa,
 thort the back good *Wallace* can him ca,
 With his good sword that was of birniste steel;
 his body in two it cutted ever each deal.
 Then to the King he raked in great yre,
 and said on loud: Was this all your desire,
 to ware a *Scot* this lightly into vain?
 there more dogs that ye would yet have slain;
 so, bring them forth, since I must dogs quel,
 to do bidding while that I with you dwel;
 gains me well to graith me in *Scotland*,
 or greater deeds there men hath tane in hand,
 then with a dog in battel to enchleue;
 at you and *France* for ever I take leave.
 The King perceived that *Wallace* grieved was,
 so earnestly he asked leave to pass;
 new'd in his mind that it was hapned so,
 so lewd a deed to let him undergo,
 knowing the worship and the great nobleness
 Of him which sprang that time in many place.
 Somely he said; It should displease you nought;
 If it desired, it bred never in my thought:
 And by the faith I owe the Crown of *France*,
 thought never to charge you to such chance;
 our men of bail that asked it for you.
Wallace answered: To God I make a vow,
 liked never in such battel to be in,
 Upon a dog no worship is to win.

The king conceiv'd how this falshood was wrought
The Squyers both were to his presence brought,
Could not deny, when they came him before,
All their trespass they told withoutten more.
The King commanded they should be done to de
Smote off their heads without any remead.
The Champions, lo, for envy causeless,
To sudden death, *Wallace* them broght through
The Squyers als, from their falshood was kend,
Envy them brought both to a sudden end.
Lords, behold, envy the evil Dragon,
In cruel fire he burneth this Region:
For whosoever abounds in envy,
To some mischief it brings him hastily?
For sake envy, thou shalt the better speed,
Hereof as now I will no further reed.
But in my matter, as I before began,
I shal declare as plainly as I can.

When *Wallace* saw they had him at envy,
Longer to byde he thought not then plainly.
Better him thought in *Scotland* for to be,
And adventure take, either to live or die.
To help his own he had far more pleasance,
Then here to byde with all the wealth in *France*.
Then his whole mind, manhood and courage,
Was plainly set to win out of bondage
Scotland again from pain and meikle shoure,
He vowed he should, or else to die therefore.
The King hath seen how good *Wallace* is set,
The letter then him gave withoutten let,
The which of late from *Scotland* was him send.
Wallace it saw, and wel their harms kend:

By the first writ thereto accordial,
 them to supply he thought he would not fail.
 Wherefore should I hereof long process make :
Wallace of France a goodly leave can take.
 The King hath seen that it would not else be,
 To chamber went, behold him might not he,
 For great langour, when *Wallace* can remove :
 The King to him kept ay kindness and love ;
 Jewels and gold his worship for to save,
 He bade them give as much as they would have.
 Lords and Ladies weeped wonder fast,
 When *Wallace* there so took his leave and past.
 No man he took but whom he thither brought ;
 Again with him *Longoveil* forth fought.
 For pain nor bliss, that good knight left him never,
 For ease besel, while death made them dissever.
 Towards the Sluce in goodly feir past he,
 A vessel got, and made him to the sea ;
 Eight ship-men hyred, and goodly wage them gave.
 To *Scotland* sure, the firth of *Tay* they have.

C H A P. I V.

*How Wallace came in Scotland again at the Batte
 of Elchock Park.*

UPon the night *Wallace* the land hath tane,
 At *Ernis-mouth*, and is to *Elchock* gane :
 He gart the ship in covert sail away,
 So out of sight they were ere it was day.
 At *Elchock* dwelt then *Wallace* cousin dear,
 That *Crawfurd* heght, the house when they com
 On the back-side *Wallace* a window fand, (ne
 And in he called, then *Crawfurd* came at hand.

From time he wist that it was good *Wallace*,
Into his barn he ordained them a place :
A mow of corn he builded them about,
And clos'd it well, none might perceive thereon
But at one place where meat was to them brought
And bedding too, as goodly as he mought.
Unto the water, whereof *Wallace* was glad.
A dern hole forth on the North side they had.
Four dayes or five in rest sojourned there,
While meat was gone, *Crawfurd* bowned for ma
To Saint *Johnstoun* their purveyance to buy :
Englishmen thought he took more abundantly,
Then he was wont in any time before,
They have him tane, and put in prison sore ;
VWhat guests he had, to tell made him request.
He said : It was but to a Kirking feast.
Yet they presumed the coming of *Wallace*,
Knowledge to get they set a subtil case ;
They let him pass with thing that he had bought,
Then after soon in all the haste they mought,
To harness yeed the power of the town,
Eight hundred men with *Butler* made them bow
Follow'd on dreigh, while that this man came hame
Wallace him saw, and said : He served blame :
In my sleeping a fell vision me told,
Till *Englishmen* that thou should me have sold.
Crawfurd said : He had been tormented sair
With *Englishmen* that put him to despair :
Therefore rise up, and soon some succour see,
I dread full sore they set watches on me.
The worthy *Scots* graiched them in good speed,
Their weapons took, then from that house they yeed

Thus suddenly feil *Sutheron* they saw :
 So few they were to fight against them aw:
 That keenly came with young *Butler* the knight,
 Then *Wallace* said : In plain lands is not right,
 At *Elchock Park* that is near here beside,
 The first sailie we think there to abyde.
 Nineteen they were, and *Crawfurd* with good will
 The twentieth man, the number to fulfil.
 The Park they took where *Wallace's* place hath seen
 Of great holin, that grew both high and green :
 With thortor trees a manner of strength made he,
 Ere they were won, they thought to gar feil die.
 The wood was thick, but little of breadth & length,
 And they had meat, they thoght to hold the strength.
 The *Englishmen* then past to *Crawfurd* place,
 Found in the barn the lodging of *Wallace's* :
 Then *Crawfurds* wife in hands soon have they tane,
 And asked at her, what way the *Scots* were gane ?
 Right wel they trowed that *Wallace* should there be
 From *France* to *Tay* he was come through the sea.
 He would not tell for boast, nor yet reward,
 Then *Butler* said : over long thou hast been spar'd,
 And gart them big a full broad burning fire,
 Herewith he grew in matalent and yre :
 The *Sutheron* swore, therein she should burnt be,
 Then *Wallace* said : She shal not end for me :
 Great sin it were yon sakeless wight to sla,
 Ere she should end, in faith there shal die ma:
 He lest the strength, and the plain field can sa,
 Loud he cryed, and said : Lo, here thy fa :
 Think thou not shame for to torment a wyfe,
 Come forth to me, and make end of our stryfe.

Fra Eutler had on field good *Wallace* seen,
For old malice he wox near wood for teen;
Upon the *Scots* they shuip all with great main,
Good *Wallace* soon the strength he took again,
A fell bicker the *Englishmen* began,
Assailied sore with many cruel man :
But they within were noble of defence,
Made great debate with force and violence.
At their entry fifteen they put to dead,
Then all the rest removed from that stead :
Yeed to array again to sailie new.

Wallace beheld, which well in war him knew,
Fellows, he said, again all at this place,
They will not fail : but thus stands the case,
Yon Knight thinks for to divide his men
In seir places, the sooth ye shal well ken,
Again on us to prove how it may be,
As now behoves some other way to see.
Contrare their might a good defence to make.
Now *Longoveil* thou shalt fix with thee take,
William mine Eme as many with you go,
And five with me, as now we have no mo.
Knight *Butler* then parted his men in three :
Wallace vified where *Butler* shuip to be,
Thither then past that entry for to wear,
Which side they did assailie with great fear.
Wallace let part on the entry begin,
But none went out that on the *Scots* came in.
Seven formost was that in the front first yeed.
Wallace five men that doughty were indeed,
Each one slew one, and *Wallace* gart two die :
Butler was next, and said : This will not be.

Aback he drew, and let his courage flake,
 The worthy *Scots* proved well for *Scotlands* sake.
 Good *Longoveil* his counter made so sore,
 And *Crawfurd* als, they sailied them no more.
 Right near by then approached the dark night,
 And stars to appear began into their sight.
Sutherland set watches, and to their supper went,
 The *Butler* was sore grieved in his intent,
 Yet fure they well of good stuff, aile and bread,
Wallace and his, they wist of no remead,
 But cold water that ran out through a strand,
 In that lodging none other food they fand.
 Then *Wallace* said: Good fellows, think not long,
 Will God, we shal be soon out of this throng,
 Suppose we fast a day or yet a night,
 Take all in thank this pain for *Scotlands* right.
 The *Earl of York* was in *Saint Johastown* still.
 To *Butler* sent, and bade him bide at will.
 To him full soon there should come new power,
 And als himself, this told the Messenger.
Butler would fain that *Wallace* had yeelden been,
 Ere the *Earl* come, and for this cause was seen,
 His goodfyre and his father both he slew,
 The knight therewith toward the Park him drew,
 What chear they made, upon the *Scots* he call'd.
 Then *Wallace* said: Far better than thou wald.
 The *Butler* said: I would fain speak with thee.
 Then *Wallace* said: Thou mayst for little fee.
Wallace, he said, thou hast done me great skaith.
 My father and my goodfyre thou slew baith.
 Then *Wallace* said: For that state thou art in,
 It were my debt for to undo thy kin:

And I think als, as God of heaven me save,
That my two hands shal graith thee to thy grave.
Then *Butler* said : That is not likely now,
But we thee have, we shall gar sydes sow.
Of this I ask, and thou would make me grant,
What I thee heght, that thing thou shalt not want.
Say forth, quoth he, be thy desire reasonable.
I shal it grant withoutten any fable.

The *Butler* said : *Wallace*, thou knowes right,
Thou may not scape by power nor by flight:
And since thou sees it may no better be,
For thy gentrice thou would thee yeeld to me.
Then *Wallace* said : thy will unskilful is,
Thou would me do which is over hie a miss :
Yeelden I am to better, I can prove.

To whom? he asked, To the great God above.
For ever each day, since I had wit of man :
Before my work, to yeeld me I began,
And als at night when that I sailed light,
I me betought to the Maker of might.

That *Butler* said : Me thinks thou hast done well.
Yet of one thing, I pray thee, let me feel :
For thy manhood this to me manifest,
When thou sees thou mayst no longer last,
On this each place which I have tane to wear,
That thou come forth, and all other forbear.

Then *Wallace* leugh at his cruel desire.
And said : I shal, though thou were wood as fire,
And all *England* the conerary had sworn,
I shal come out thereat each place the morn,
Or else this night, trust wel that I thee say :
Abide not here till nine hours of the day.

Butler sent forth the chake-watch on the side,
 That each place boldly he bowned to byde;
 Thus still they bode while day began to pear,
 Thick mist fel, the Planet was not clear.
 Wallace assayed all that place about,
 Like as he would at an some place brake out.
 While Butlers men away from him could go,
 To helpe the slave; when thay saw it was so.
 Wallace and his fast sped them to that stead,
 Where Butler bode feil men they brought to dead.
 The worthy Scots soon passed through that melie,
 Crawford therewith was sore hurt on the knee;
 At earth he was, good Wallace turned again,
 And at one straik the Butler hath he slain.
 Lint up that man under his arm so strong,
 Defending him out that felon throng.
 Good rowm he made amongst them where he goes,
 With his right hand he slew five of his foes;
 Sure out Crawford by force of his person,
 Nine aker broad ere ever he set him down.
 The Sutherland found that their Chifstain was dead,
 Embled him about, but then was no remead;
 Thirty with him of the wightest he brought,
 Dead on that place, wherent the Scots out sought.
 Wallace and his by then was from their sight,
 Sutherland bode still for great loss of that knight.
 The mist was mirk, that Wallace lyked wel,
 Himself was glad, and said to Longoveil;
 At Methuen-wood is my desire to be,
 For there is bestial to get in great plentie.
 By then they were wel come unto the hight,
 The mist flaked, the sun shin'd fair and bright.

Soon were they ware, a little space them by,
Of four and thirty in a company.

Then *Wallace* said, Be yon men friends or fo,
We will them see, since that they are no mo.

When they came near, a noble Knight it was,
The which to name heght Sir *Hew of Dundas*,
And Sir *John Scot*, a wise and worthy Knight,
Into *Strathern* a man of meikle might :

For there he had great part of heritage :

Dundas sister he had in marriage.

Passing they were, and might no longer lest,
To *Englishmen* their fewty for-to lest.

The Lord of *Brechin* such cōmand had them made
Of King *Edward* to hold their lands brade.

But fra they saw that it was wight *Wallace*,
Held up their hands, and thanked God of grace
Of his great help which he had sent him there :

To *Methwen* wood with one assent they fare,
Soon got them meat of bestial that they fand,
Rested that day: when night was come on hand

To *Birnane* wood but resting are they gane,
Where they have found the Squyer good *Ruthwen*

In out-law use he had long lived there,

Of bestial while he might get no mair.

They tarried not, but into *Arhole* yeed, (dread
Where meat was scant, there *Wallace* had great

Passed to *Lorn*, right little found they there,
Of wild and tame that Countrey was made bare

But in the strengths, there food was leaved none

These worthy *Scots* then made a piteous moan.

Sir *John Scot* said, He had far rather die

Into good name, and leave his heirs free,

Then for to byde as bound in subjection.
 When *Wallace* saw these good men of renown,
 With hunger stad, almost might live no more,
 Wit ye for them he sighed wonder fore.
 Good men, he said, I am the cause of this,
 At your desire, I shal amend this miss,
 Or leave you free some chevance for to ma.
 All him alone he bowned for to ga :
 Prayed them byde while he might come again;
 Out over an hill he passed into plain.

Out of their sight into a Forest side,
 He set him down under an oak to byde.
 His bow and sword he leaned to a tree,
 In angnish great on grouf then turned he :
 This piteous moan was for his men so wrought,
 That of himself little thing he then rought.
 O wretch ! he said, that never could be content
 Of over great might that the great God thee lent
 But thy fierce minde, wilful and variable,
 With great Lordship, thou couldst not so byde
 And wilful wit, for to make *Scotland* free: (stable
 God lykes not that which I have tane on me :
 For worthier then I of birth was born,
 Through my desire for hunger are forlorn.
 I ask at God them to restore again :
 I am the cause, I should have all the pain.
 While studying thus while flyting with himself,
 While at the last upon a sleep he fell,
 Three dayes before there had him followed five
 The which was bound, or else to lose their live :
 The Earl of *York* bade them so great guardoun,
 That they by this, thought to put *Wallace* dow

Thre

Three of them was born men of *England*,
And two was *Scots* that took the deed on hand:
And some men said, the third brother betrayed,
Kildromy cast, where great sorrow was raised.
A chyld they had which used to bear meat,
In wilderness amongst the mountains great;
They had all seen the disleverance of *Wallace*,
From his good men, and where he bode on chase,
Amongst the thick wood, in covert held them law,
While they perceived he could on sleeping saw,
And these five approached *Wallace* near;
What's best to do? at other fast they spier.
One man said thus: It were an high renown,
And we might lead him quick to Saint *Johnstoun*.
Lo, how he lyes, we may our grips wail,
Of his weapons he shal have none avail;
We shal him bind in contrare of his wil,
And lead him thus on back-side of yon hil,
So that his men shal nothing of him know.
The other four assented to that saw;
And then these five made them unto *Wallace*,
And thocht through force to bind him in that place.
What? crow'd these men for to hold *Wallace* downe
The manliest man, the starkest of person,
Living he was, als stood into such right,
We trust great God his deeds hath in sight.
They gripped him, and out of sleep be braid:
What meaneth this? then sadly *Wallace* said.
About be turned, and up his arms thrang,
On these traitours with knightly force he dang;
The starkest man into his hands hint he,
And all his brains he dang out on a tree.

His sword he got soon after that he rose,
 Champion-like amongst the four he goes :
 Ever a man he gave die at a dinc : (Aint,
 When two were dead, the other three would not
 Made them to flee, but then it was no boot :
 Was none living might pass from him on foot.
 He followed fast, and soon to death them brought,
 Then to the chylde sadly again he sought.
 What didst thou here ? the childe with a pale face,
 On knees did fall, and asked *Wallace* grace :
 With them I was, & knew nothing their thought,
 Into service, as they me bade, I wrought.
 What bearest thou there ? but meat the chylde can
 Go take it up, and pass with me away. (say.
 Meat in this time is far better then gold.
Wallace and he forth founded on the fold.
 Who brought *Wallace* from his enemies bold ?
 Who but great God that hath this world to hold
 He was his help in many felon thrang.
 With glad cheer thus unto *Ern* can he gang,
 Both roasted flesh there was, als bread and cheefe,
 To succour them that were in point to lise :
 And he it deals to four men and fiftie,
 Which had before fasted over dayes three :
 Then took his part, he had fasted as long.
 Where heard ye ever any in such a throng,
 In hunger so sleeping, and weaponless,
 So well recovered as *Wallace* did in case ?
 Plainly force vanquishd his enemies five :
 Men of wit this question will describe.
 Withoutten gloze, I will tell forth my tale,
 How came this meat, this fellowship asked hait :

To their desire *Wallace* no answer yold,
VWhere five were dead, he led them forth & to
Greatly displeased was all the Chevalrie,
To a Chiftain they held it fantasie
To walk alone. *VWallace* with sober mood,
Said, Hereof hath come nothing now but good
To the low-land again full fast they sought,
Aske at the child, if he could with them ought,
VWhere they might best of purveyance for to win
Of none, he said, was this Countrey within,
Nor all about, in as far as I know,
While that ye come down to the *Rannoch* haw.
That Lord hath stuff, both aile, bread and vernage
Of King *Edward* he takes full meikle wage.
Then *VWallace* said, My self shal be your guide
I know that stead about on either side :
Through the wild land he guided them full right
To *Rannoch* hall he brought them that same night
A watch was set, and that full soon they ta,
He was a *Scot*, yet would he not him sla,
But gart him tell the manner of that place :
Thus entred they within a little space :
The gate they wan, for Castle there was none,
But mood-wall wight, withoutten lime or stone
VWallace in haste strake up the chamber door
With his right foot, that stalwart was and stour :
Then they within awaked suddenly,
The Lord got up, and mercy can he cry.
Fra time he wist that good *VWallace* was there,
He thanked God, then said these words mair :
True man I was, and win against my will
With *Englishmen*, suppose I like it ill :

All *Scots* we are that in this house are now,
 At your command all boldly shal we bow.
 Of our Nation good *Wallace* had great pitie;
 Took oaths of them, and then meat asked he.
 Good chear they made while day-light on the
 This true man soon sembled him beforne. (morn,
 Three sons he had that stalwart were and bold,
 And twenty men of kin in his household.
Wallace was blyth they made him some supply:
 Said, I thank God, that we thus multiply.
 All that day over in good liking they rest,
 Watches they chhoose to keep them that could best
 Upon the morn, the light day when he saw,
 Then *VWallace* said, Our power for to know
 We will take field, and up our banner raise,
 In right of *Scotland*, and contrare of our faes.
 VVe will no more now us in covert hide,
 Power to us will semble on each side.
 Then horse they got, the best that could be there,
 Towards *Dunkeld* the gainest way they fare.
 The Bishop then got him to *Saint Johnstoun*,
 The *Scots* slew that were of that Nation,
 Both poor and rich, and servan's that they fand,
 Left none alive that was born of *England*.
 The place they took, and made them well to fare,
 Of purveyance that Bishop had brought there.
 Jewels they got, both gold and silver bright,
 VVith good chear there five days sojourned right:
 On the sixt day *VWallace* to counsel went,
 Gart call the best, and show'd th-m his intent:
 No men we have to assault *Saint Johnstoun*,
 Into the North therefore let us make bown:

In *Ross*, ye know, good men a strength hath made
Hear they of us, they come withoutten bade :
Als into *Bute* is good Bishop *Sinkler*,
Fra he got wor, he comes withotten mair.
Good west-land men of *Arrane* and *Rouchlie*,
Fra they be warned, they will all come to me.
This purpose took, and in the North they ride,
No *Englishmen* durst in their get abide.
Whom *VWallace* took, they knew the old ransou
Fra he came home, to flee they made them bow
And *Scots*-men seemed to *VWallace* fast,
In awful fear out through the land they past.
Strengths were left, wot ye, all desolate,
Against these folk no man durst make debate :
In arrayed battel they rode to *Aberdene*,
In whole number seven thousand then were seen
But *Englishmen* had left the town all waste,
On ever each side away then can they hake,
In all the land left neither more nor less,
Lord *Bewmont* took the sea at *Buchan-ness*,
Through *Scotland* then was manifest in plain,
The Lords that fled, in heart was wonder fain.
The Knight *Clement* of *Ross* came suddenly
In *Murray* land with their good Chevalry.
The house of *Narn* that good Knight well hath
Slew the Captain, and good men many ane. (cane)
Out of *Murray* and *Buchan* land came they,
To seek *Bewmont*, but he was past away.
Then those good men to *VWallace* passed right.
When *Wallace* saw sir *John Ramsay* the Knight,
And other good that had been from him long,
Great courage then was raised them among.

The land he ruled as that him liked best, (rest.
 To Saint Johnstoun then rode ere they would

The sledge of Saint Johnstoun.

AT every port a stalwart watch he made,
 Confirmed a sledge, and stedfastly abade.
 Bishop Sinkler in all good haste him dight,
 Came out of Bute with seemly men in light;
 Out of the Yles of Rauchly and Arrane,
 Lindsay and Boyd, with good men many ane:
 Adam Wallace Barron of Richartown,
 Full sadly sought to Wallace of renown.
 At Saint Johnstoun bade at the sailie still,
 For Sutherland men they might well pass at will:
 For in their way there durst no enemy be,
 But fled away by land, and eke by sea.
 About the town thus sembled they but more,
 For they had been with good Wallace before.
 Brown, Lawder, good Richard of Lundie,
 In a good barge they past about by sea:
 In S. Johnstoun haven their ankers have they set,
 Two English ships they took withoutten let;
 The one they burnt, and stuffed the other well
 With attailie, and stalwart men in steel,
 To keep the port, there should come no victual
 To the town, nor men that might avail.
 From South and North many from Scotland fled,
 Left Castles waste, feil left their lives in wed.
 The Sutherland Bishop that before left Dunkel,
 To Bondon past, and told Edward him sel.
 In Scotland there had fallen a great mischance;
 When lent he soon for Aymer the Wallace,

And asked him, What then was best to do?
He heght to pass, and take great gold thereto,
Into *Scotland*, some means there to make
Against *Wallace*, on hand thus can he take.
He said, he would undo King *Edwards* Crown,
Except he might through treason put him down.
King *Edward* heght what thing that *Wallange*
He should it keep, thereto he gave his hand. (ban
VWallange took leave, and into *Scotland* went,
To *Bothwel* came, then cast in his intent,
What man there was might *VWallace* best beguile
And soon he found within a little while,
Sir *John Menteith* that *Wallace* Gossip was,
A messenger sir *Aymer* hath gart pass:
At *Ruglin* Kirk these two together met,
Him to betray the barnage there was let.
Then *VWallange* said, sir *Iohn* thou knowest th
VWallace again riseth contrare the King, (thing
And thou mayst have what Lordship thou wilt wa
And thou wouldst work as I would thee counsel:
Yon tyrant holds the Realms at trouble baith.
To thrifty men it doth ful meikle skaith:
He trusteth thee, thou mayst ful wel him take,
Of this matter, I rede an end thou make.
Were he away, we might at liking reign
All as Lords, and live under the King.
Then *Menteith* said: He is our Governour,
For us he bode in many fellon stour,
Not for himself, but for our heritage,
To sell him thus, it were a great outrage.
Then *Wallange* said: And thou well understood,
Great merit it were, he spilt so meikle blood

Christen men, putteth souls in peril,
 And me als he shal be holden hail.
 For his life, and kept into prison,
 King Edward would have him in subjection :
 When Menteith thought, so they wold keep cunnand,
 He would ful fain have had him off Scotland.
 Wallange saw him in a study be,
 Three thousand pound of fine gold let him see,
 And heght he should the Lennox have at will,
 Thus reasonably Menteith granted theretil.
 An obligation with his own hand he made,
 When took the gold, and Edwards seal so brade,
 And gave them his when he his time might see,
 To take Wallace, over Sulway give him free
 To Englishmen : by this treasonable concord,
 That John should be of all the Lennox Lord.
 Thus Wallace should in England kepted be,
 Edward might make Scotland to him free.
 Where coverise was over great master seen,
 One example takes how another hath been.
 For covetise puts in pains strong and fell :
 For covetise the serpent is in hell :
 For covetise good Hector took the dead :
 For covetise there can be no remead ;
 For covetise good Alexander was lost,
 And Julius als for all his reif and boast.
 For covetise died Aribur of Britaine :
 For covetise there hath died many ane.
 For covetise the traitor Ganillion,
 The flowre of France he put to confusion.
 For covetise they poysoned Goutefray
 Antioch, as the Author will say.

For covetise *Menteith* upon the false wise,
Betrayed *Wallace* who was his Gossop thrise.
Wallange in haste with blyth will and good heart
To *London* past, and shewed it to *Edward*;
Of their contract they had far more pleasance,
Then of fine gold given in the ballance,
Of greater weight then his ransome might be.
Of *Wallace* forth yet speak some part will we.

At *Saint Johnstoun* yet was the sieging still,
In a morning the *Sutheron* with good will,
Five hundred men in arms right egerly,
They issued forth to make a jeopardie,
At the South port upon *Scot* and *Dundas*,
Who in their time right wise and worthy was;
Against their foes right sharply fought and sore,
In that Counter seven score to death they bore
Yet *Englisshmen* that cruel were and keen,
Full dertly fought, where doughty deeds were seen
From the West side drave all the *Scots* hail
To the fighters. When they saw nought avail,
But in again full fast they can them speed;
The Knight *Dundas* full doughty proved indeed
Over near the gate full bandonly he bade,
With a good sword full great mastery he made,
Nought knowing wel his fellowes were him fra,
In at the gate the *Sutheron* can him ta;
Unto the Earl they led him hastily;
When he him saw, he said he should not die,
To slay this one it may us little remead.
He sent him forth to *Wallace* in that stead.
Unto the North his battels hath he brought.
While he him saw, of this he wist right nought

went to the Earl, and thanked him largely,
 might for to quite when he such cause might see:
 yet yet therefore loverance he would not grant,
 though they were yeelden, and come recryant.
 for gold nor good he would no tribute take,
 great assault then they began to make.
 the Earl of *Fyfe* dwelt under trews long
 of King *Edward*, and then he thought it wrong,
 that *Vallance* so was fiedging Saint *Johnstoun*,
 if he come in right help of the Crown:
 to *Englishmen* he would not keep that band,
 then came he soon with good men of the land,
 and *Iohn Vallance* was then Sheriff of *Fyfe*,
 to *Wallace* past, and sterked him in that stryfe.
 the Earl was come of good true noble blood.
 of the old *Thane*, which in his time was good.
 then all about to Saint *Johnstoun* they gang,
 the fellon fault was hideous and strang.
 all feil faggors into the dyke they cast,
 ether and hay about the stakes they fast:
 with trees and earth a great passage they made,
 out over the wals they yeed in battell braid:
 the *Sutheron* then made great defence again,
 while at the walls there was a thousand slain.
Vallance and his yeed rayed in battell right,
 the *Sutheron* men derfly to death they dight:
 to save the Earl *Vallance* the Herauld send,
 good *Iop* himself the which before him kend:
 at *Dundas* sake he said, he should not die,
Vallance himself thus ordained for to be,
 small Hackney to him he gart betake,
 ever and gold his charges for to make,

Set on his cloak a token for to see,
A Lyon in wax that should his conduct be:
Conveyed him forth, and no man him withal,
Women and bairns, *Wallace* gart free them all.
And then he cryed: True *Scots* to their own.
Plenisht the land which long had been overthrowne
Then *Vallace* past the South-land for to see,
Edward the *Bruce* in his tyme right worthy,
That year before he had in *Ireland* been,
And there with him were cruel men and keen;
Fifty in feir were of his mothers kin:
At *Kirkubright* in *Galloway* entred in,
With these fifty he had vanquisht nine score;
And then past withoutten tarry more,
To *Wigton* soon, and that Castle hath tane,
Sutherland were fled, and left it all alane:
Wallace him met with true men reverently,
To *Lochmabane* went all that Chevalry:
They made *Edward* both Lord and leader there
This condition *Wallace* made him but mair.
But a short time to byde *Robert* the King,
If he came not in this Region to regin,
That *Edward* should receive the Crown but fail,
This beght *Wallace*, and all the barnage hail:
In *Lochmabane* Prince *Edward* leined stil,
And *Wallace* past to *Cumnock* with good wil:
At the *Black bog* where he had wont to be,
Upon that head a Royal house held he.
English Wardens to *London* past but mair,
And told the King of all their great misfare:
How *Wallace* can *Scotland* from him reduce,
How he had received *Edward Bruce*.

the commons swore they should comen ever more
 upon Scotland, and Wallace living were.
 When Edward wrote to Menteith privily,
 prayd to haste, the time was passed by
 of the promises to which he was bounden,
 for John Menteith into his wit hath founden,
 how he should best his purpose to fulfil,
 his sisters son in haste he called him till,
 and ordained him in dwelling with Wallace;
 on oath again he gart him make on case,
 that time he wist Wallace in quyet draw,
 he should him warn, what aventure might faw.
 This man granted that such thing should be done;
 With Wallace thus he was in service soon:
 Of treason, Wallace had little thought:
 His laborous minde on other matters wrought.
 Thus Wallace thrice hath made all Scotland free,
 when he desired in lasting peace to be:
 As of wear he was in some part irk,
 he purposed to serve God and the Kirk,
 and for to live under his righteous King,
 that he desired above all earthly thing.

CHAP V.

How Wallace was betrayed by sir John Menteith, &
 had in England, and was martyred there.

The Herauld 7op in England soon he send,
 And wrote to Bruce right heartly his comend
 beseeching him to come and take his Crown,
 one should gainstand, Clerk, Burges, nor Barron:
 The Herauld past, when Bruce saw his creedance,
 thereof he took a perfite great pleasance.

With his own hand again wrote to *Wallace*,
And thanked him of lawty and kindnes,
Beseeching him this matter to conceal,
For him behoved out of *England* to steal.
For long before was keeped the ragment,
Which *Cumming* had to byde the Parliament
Into *London*, and if they him accuse,
To come from them he would have some excuse.
He prayed *Wallace* on *Glasgow* more to wake,
The next first night of *July* for his sake,
And bade he should but into quyet be,
For he with him might bring few Chevalry :
Wallace was blyth when he this wryting saw,
His household soon he gart to *Glasgow* draw.
That moneth there he ordained them to byde :
Keirly he took each night with him to ryde,
And this young man that *Menteith* to him send
Wist none but they what way that *Wallace* went
The which gart warn his Eme the eighteen night
Sixty full soon Sir *John Menteith* gart dight,
Of his own kin and allaya was born,
To his treason he gart them all be sworn :
From *Dumbartan* they sped them hastily,
Near *Glasgow* Kirk they busked privily.
Wallace past forth where that the tryst was set,
A spy they made, and followed him but let.
Robertson was near the way beside,
And but one house where *Wallace* used to byde
He woke on foot while passed was midnight,
Keirly and he then for a sleep them dight :
They bade this man that he should wake his pe
And waken *Wallace*, came men from any airt.

When they sleept the traytour took good heed;
 He met his Eme, and bade him have no dread,
 In sleep he was, and with him but one man,
 He may him have for any craft he can:
 Without the house their weapons laid them fra,
 For wel they wist got *Wallace* one of tha,
 And on his feet, his ransome should be sold;
 Thus sembled they about that feeble hold,
 His traytour watch from *Wallace* then he stall,
 Both knife and sword, his bow and arrows all.
 After midnight in hands they have him tane,
 Lumbred on sleep, no man with him but ane.
 Early they took and led him from that place,
 And him to death withouten longer space.
 They thocht to bind *Wallace* with strengths strong
 On foot he got these fell traytours among:
 He gripped about, but no weapons he fand,
 Yet with a stool that did beside him stand,
 He back of one he bursted in the thrang,
 And of another the harns out he dang,
 And als many as hands could on him lay,
 He force him hint, for to have him away:
 That that power on foot might not him lead
 Out of that house while they or he were dead.
 At *John* saw wel by force it might not be,
 Ere he were tane rather he thought to die:
 He bade cease, and then spake to *Wallace*,
 And show'd him forth a ful right subtil case:
 He have so long here used you alone,
 While wit thereof is into *England* gone,
 Therefore hear me, and sober your courage;
 The *Englishmen* with a ful great barnage,

Aresembled here, and set this house about,
That ye by force on no wise can win out,
Suppose ye had the strength of good *Herbert*,
Amongst the Host ye may not long endure:
And they you take, in haste your death is dight;
I have spoken with Lord *Cliffurd* that Knight,
Their Chifftain is, and wel meaned for your lyfe;
They ask no more but be quite of your stryfe;
To *Dumbartane* ye shal pass forth with me,
Then in your house ye may in safety be.

Sutherland such use with *Menteith* long had they;
That *Wallace* trowed some part that he would
Menteith said: Sir, lo, weapons none we have,
We can e in traist, your lyfe if we might save.
Wallace trowed wel, and he his Gossop thrise,
That he would nought by no manner of wise
Him to betray, for all *Scotland* so wyde:
An oath of him he asked in that tyde.

There wanted wit, what should his oaths more
Forsworn to him he was long time before.

The oath he made, *Wallace* came in his wil,
Right fraudfully all thus he shew'd him til.
Gossop, he said, as prisoner they must you see,
Or else through force they wil take you from me.
A couch with sight upon his hands they laid,
And under then with ficker cords they braid,
Both sharp and tough, and fast together drew.
Alace, the *Bruce* might fore that binding rew,
Which made *Scotland* soon broken upon ease,
By *Cummings* death, and los of good *Wallace*.
They led him forth in feir amongst them aw:
Keirly he mist, and then the *Sutherland* saw,

Then wist he wel that he betrayed was,
 Toward the South with him when they can pals :
 Yet they him said : In truth he should not die,
 King *Edward* would keep him in good safety,
 For the honour of war that he had wrought :
 But the fore bands so troubled all his thought,
 Credence thereto forsooth he could not give,
 That he wist wel they would not let him live.
 A false foul case that *Menteith* hath him sold,
 When on this wise good *Wallace* he was call'd,
 Some men sayes, it was to save his Lord,
 They lied all out that made that false record :
 At the *Fawkirke* the good *Stewart* was slain,
 Our *Chronicles* rehearses that in plain,
 On *Magdalene* day the eighteenth year before,
Cummings death therefore it witnesseth more :
 And at *Restoun* *Wallace* was treasonably
 Thus fallily stoln from his good Chevalry,
 In *Glasgow* lay, and wist not of this thing,
 Thus was he lost, in byding of his King.
 South they him led, ay holding the west land,
 Delivered him in haste over *Sulway* sand.
 The Lord *Cliffurd* and *Vallance* took him there,
 To *Carlile* town ful fast with him they fare ;
 In prison him set, that was a great dolour :
 That house after they called *VWallace* tower.
 Some men then said that knew not wel the case,
 In *Barwick* town to death they put *VWallace* :
 Contrare is known by this opinion,
 That *Sutheron* men had not then *Barwick* towns.
 To *Scotland* free it was til *Soulis* it gave,
 For Lord *Cumming* to *England* with the lave.

Another point is, the traytours durst not pass,
That sold him so, where *Scots*-men master was,
The third point is, the commons of *England*,
What they deny they will not understand :
That thing be done, for witness that may be,
Nor credence give further then they may see.
To see him die, *Edward* had more desire,
Then to be Lord of all the whole *Empyre*,
And for this cause they kepted him so lang.
While the commons might unto *London* gang.

A *Lace*, *Scotland*, to whom shalt thou complain
Alace, from pain who can thee now refrain
Alace, thine help is falsly brought to ground :
Thy best Chifcain in brith bands is bound.
Alace, thou hast now lost thy guyde of light.
Alace, who shal defend thee in thy right ?
Alace, thy pain approacheth wonder near.
With sorrow soon thou must be left on heere.
Thy gracious guyde, thy greatest Governour.
Alace, over near hath come thy fatal hour.
Alace, who shal now beet thee of thy bail ?
Alace, when shal of harms thou be hail ?
Who shal defend ? who shal thee now make free
Alace, in war, who shal thine helper be ?
Who shal thee keep ? who shal thee now redeem
Alace, who shal the *Saxons* from thee fleem ?
I can no more but beseech God of grace,
Thee to restore in haste to wealch and peace.
So good *Wallace* may succour thee no mair,
The loss of him increaserh meikle care.
Now of his men in *Glasgow* still they lay :

What sorrow raise when they mist him away :
 The cruel pain, the woful complaining,
 Hereof to tell it were an heavy thing :
 Will let be, and speak of him no mair :
 Little rehearse is over meikle care,
 And principally where redemption is none,
 Helps not to tell their piteous moan :
 The death thereof is yet in remembrance;
 Will let staik of sorrow the ballance.
 Out *Longoueil* to *Lochmabane* can pass,
 And there heght he where good *Prince Edward*
 Out of *Scotland* he should pass never more, (was
Wallace sought to his heart full sore ;
 The Realm of *France* he vowed never to see,
 For revenge *Wallace*, or else therefore to die.
 There he remained while coming of the King ;
 With *Bruce* in war this good Knight forth did ring ;
 Remembrance since is in the *Bruces* book,
 Second he was when they *Szat Johnston* took,
 Followed the King at winning of the town,
 The *Bruce* therefore gave him full great guardoun
 All *Chartris* land the good King to him gave,
Chartris since then of him are come the laves,
 Where to should I far in this story wend,
 But of my book to make a final end.

Robert the *Bruce* came home on the thrid day
 In *Scotland*, after that *Wallace* was away,
 To *Lochmabane*, where he found good *Edward*,
 Whereof he was greatly rejoyced in heart ;
 But fra he wist *Wallace* away was led,
 Someikle ball into his breast was bred.

Near off his wit he worthed for that deed :
Edward full soon then to his brother yeed.
A sudden chance this was in wo from weal.
Good *Edward* saith, This helpeth not a deal :
Let mourning be, it may be no remead :
Ye have him tint, ye should revenge his dead.
But for your cause he took the wars in hand,
In your defence, and thrice hath fred *Scotland*,
The which was lost from us and all our kin,
Were not *Wallace*, we had never entred in.
Mirrour he was of lawty and manhead ?
In wars the best that ever power shall lead :
Had he liked for to have tane the Crown,
Would none him let that is in this Region.
Had not been he, ye should had none entress
Into this Realm, for treason and falseness.
That shall ye see : the traigour that him sold,
From you he thinks *Dumbarton* for to hold.
Some comfort take, and let slak of this sorrow,
The King charged *Edmard* on the morrow,
Redresse to take of wrong that wrought him was
To *Dalwyntoun* he ordained him to passe,
And men of arms, if they found *Cumming* there,
Put him to death, for no dread they would spare.
They found him not, the King him after slew
Into *Dumfries*, where witnessses were anew ;
That hapned wrong, over great haste in a King ;
To work by law, it may skaith little thing.
I need not here no further for to shaw
How that was done, is known to you aw.
But young *Douglas* first to the King can passe,
In all his war that wight and worthy was ;

Nor how the King hath tane on him the Crown,
 Of all that here I make but short mention:
 Nor how Lord *Soules* gave *Barwick* town away,
 How after soon als tint was *Galloway*.
 How *John* of *Lorn* against his right King rose,
 On either side how *Bruce* had many foes.
 How bold *Brechin* contrare the King could ride,
 Right few was then in wear with him to bide.
 Nor how the North was given from the good king
 Which made him long in painfull war to reign;
 But true to him was *James* the good *Douglas*,
 For *Bruces* right bode well in many place:
 Under the King he was the best Chiftain:
 But *Wallace* I set a Chiftain him alane,
 Therefore to him is no comparifon,
 As of one man, save reverence of the Crown,
 But so many as of the *Douglas* hath been,
 Good of one thing was never in *Scotland* seen.
 Comparifons I cannot well declare,
 Of *Bruces* book, as now I speak no mair.
 Mifter *John Barbour* which was a cunning Clark,
 Hath of the *Bruce* said mickle in his wark:
 In this matter I am prolix almaist,
 To my purpose briely I will me hafte,
 How good *Wallace* was set amongst his foes,
 To *London* with him *Clifford* and *Vallance* goes
 Where King *Edward* was right fain of that fang:
 They have him fet fast in a prison strang.
 Of *Wallace* end my self would leave for dread
 To say the worst, but righteoufnesse me lead.
 We find his life was als so very true,
 His fatal hour I will not feinzie now:

AN ADMONITION TO THE
R E A D E R.

*These things which follow, savouring of the
superstitious credulity of the people, and
deceitfull couenge of the Monks of these
times, we have notwithstanding insert,
lest we should seem at our own hand rashly
to omit any thing which we found in our
coppie: to the end, that they may admonish
us to study to be thankfull to our blessed
Lord, who hath now opened our eyes to see
through the mist wherewith these former
ages were blinded.*

A Monk there was in Burie Abbay than;
Into that tyme a right religions man:
A young man als with him in Order stood,
Who knew his life was clean, perfect and good:
His Father Monk was visited with sickness,
Out of the world as he should pass on case,
His brother saw his sprue likely to pass,
And band of him right earnestly could he ask,
To come again, and show him of the meed,
That he should ask of God for his good deed;
He granted him at his power to prieve,
To come again, if God will give him leave:
His sprue changed out of this worlds pain,
That same time came to the Monk again.

Such

Such thing hath been, as is by voice and sight,
Where he appeared there shined meikle light,
Like to lanterns they illuminate so clear,
That worldly wight thereto might be no pear,
A voice thus said : God hath me granted grace,
That I shal keep my promise in this place.
The *Monk* was blyth of this clean figure fair :
But a firebrand in his forehead he bare,
As that him thought mislyked all the lave.
Where art thou sprite? answered: So God me save
In Purgatory. How long shalt thou bide there
But half a year to come, and little mair.
Purgatory is, I let thee well to wit,
In any place where God will it commit :
An hours space I was there judged to be,
And that passeth, suppose I speak with thee.
Why hast thou that, and all the rest so whole,
For in science, I thought me most avail :
Who prides therein, their labour is in waste:
For science comes but of the holy Ghaist.
After thine hour, where is thy passage even ?
When time comes, he said, to lasting heaven,
What time is that, I pray you now declare ?
Two are on life must be before me there.
Which two are they, the verity me ken ?
The first hath been a great slayer of men,
Now they him keep to martyr in *London* town,
On wednesday before the King and common.
Is none in lyfe that hath so many slain.
O brother, he said, this tale is but in vain,
For slaughter is to God abhominable.
Then said the sprite ; Forsooth this is no fable,

He is *Wallace*, defender of *Scotland*,
 For righteous war that he took upon hand.
 Righteousness there is loved over the lave,
 Therefore in heaven he shal that honour have :
 Syn a poor Priest is meikle to commend,
 He took in thanks what thing that God him send,
 For godliness and good devotion,
 Heaven he shal have to lasting warison.
 I am the third granted through Gods grace.
 Brother, he said, tell I this in our place,
 They will but deem I either dream or rave.
 Then said the sprite: This witness thou shalt have;
 The bells shal ring for ought that ye do may,
 When they him slay, half an hour of the day.
 And so they did, the *Monk* wost what they ailed.
 Throgh broad *Britain* the word thereof was scail-
 The sprite took leave at Gods will to be. (ed.
 Of *Vallace* end to hear is great pitie.
 And I will not put men in great dolour,
 But lightly pass out over this fatal hour.
 On wednesday fierce *Sutheron* forth him brought
 To martyre him as they before had thought.
Wallace was martyrd, the truth to you to tell,
 As were *Oswald*, *Edmond*, *Edward* with pain full:
 With men of arms led him a ful great rout,
 With a bold sprite then *Wallace* blent about :
 A Priest he asked, for him that died on tree a
 King *Edward* then commanded his Clergie,
 And said, I charge in pain of losse of life,
 None be so bold yon tyrant for to shrife,
 He hath long rung in contrare of mine hieneffe.
 A blessed Bishop soon present in that place,

Of *Canterbury* he then was righteous Lord,
Against the King he made his right record,
And said: My self shal bear his confession,
If I have might, in contrare of thy Crown,
Or thou through force shal stop me from this thing
I vow to God which is my righteous King,
Over all *England* I shal thee interdite,
And make it known thou art an heretick:
The Sacrament of Kirk I shal him give,
Then take thy choise, to starve or let me live:
It were more vail in worship of thy Crown,
To keep such one in lyfe in thy bandoun,
Then all the land and good that thou hast rest,
But covetise thee ay from honour drest:
Thou hast thy life rung long in wrongous deed,
That shal be seen on thee, or on thy seed.
The King gave charge they should the Bishop take,
But wise Lords counsell'd to let him ga:
All wise men said, that his desire was right.
To *Wallace* then he rai'd in their sight,
And sadly heard his confession to the end,
Humbly to God his sprite he did commend:
Lawty him served with hearty devotion.
Upon his knees, and said an Orison:
His leave he took, and to *Westminster* rode.
The Cleughmen there they bare *Wallace* but bod
Unto a place his martyrdom to take,
For to his death he willed them furthering make,
From the first night he was tane in *Scotland*,
They keep'd him into the famine band:
Nothing he had that would have done him good
But *Englishmen* him served of carefull food,

The worldly lyfe desires the sustenance,
 Though he it got in contrare of pleasance.
 These thirty dayes his bands they durst not slak,
 While he was bound to a scamyle of aik,
 With yron chains that were both stark and kern.
 A Clerk they set to hear what he would mean.
 Thou *Scott*, he said, that so great wrong hath done,
 Thy fatal hour thou sees aproacheth soon,
 Thou should in mind remember thy mildred,
 That Clerks may when they the Psalms read,
 For Christen souls which oft makes them to pray,
 In their number thou may be one of thay,
 For now thou sees on force thou must de cease.
 Then *Wallace* said : For all thy round rehearse,
 Thou hast no charge, suppose I had done miss,
 Yon blessed Bishop hath heght I shal have blisse,
 And I trow wel that God shal it admit,
 Thy simulate words shal not my conscience smit :
 Comfort I have of way that I should gang,
 Most pain I feel that I byde here so lang.
 Then said the Clerk: Our King sent oft thee tilly
 Thou might have had all *Scotland* at thy will,
 To hold of him, and ceased of thy stry fe,
 So as a Lord to reign through all thy lyfe.
 Ther *Wallace* said : Thou speaks of mighty thing;
 Had I lasted, and got my righteous King,
 And worthy *Bruce* received had his Crown,
 I thought have made *England* at his bandoun,
 That utterly it should been at his will,
 What pleased him to save, or else to spill.
 Well, said the Clerk, I see thou repents nought,
 Of wickedness thou hast a fellaun thought,

Is none in world that hath so many slain, (bair)
Therefore to ask, me think, thou should
Grace at our King, and then at his barnage.
Then *Wallace* smiled a little at his language.
I grant, he said, some *Englisshmen* I slew,
In my quarrel, me thought not half anew:
I moved no war but for to win our own,
Both God and man the right full well hath know
Thy frustrate words doth nought but tyres me,
I thee command, in Gods name, let me be.
A Sheriff gart this Clerk soon from him pass,
Right as they durst, granted what he would ask.
A Psalter book *Wallace* on him had ever
From his child-hood, with it he would not sever
The better he trowed in his voyage to speed:
But when he was dispoyled of his weed,
This grace he asked at Lord *Cliffurd* that Knight
To let him have the Psalter book in sight:
He gart a Priest open before him hold,
while they to him had done what that they wold
Stedfast he red for ought they did him there.
Feil *Sutherland* said, that *Wallace* felt no fair,
Good devotion so was his beginning,
Continued therewith, and so was his ending,
While speech and sprite at once all can fare,
To lasting blis we trust for evermair.
I will not tell how he devided was
In five parts, and ordained for to pass,
Yet his sprite thus by likeliness was well:
Of *Wallace* lyfe who hath a better feel,
May show forth more with wit and eloquence:
For I so this have done my deligence,

After the prose given from the Latine book,
 Which Master *Blair* in his time undertook,
 In fair Latine complied to the end,
 With good witness, which more is to commend.
 Bishop *Sinkler* that Lord was of *Dunkel*,
 He got this book, and confirmed to himself:
 For very truth thereof he had no dread,
 Himself had heard great part of *Wallace* deed.
 His purpose was to have sent it to *Rome*,
 Our Father of Kirk therein to give his doom.
 But Master *Blair*, and als Sir *Thomas Gray*,
 After *Wallace* they lived many a day.
 These two knew best of Sir *Williams* deed,
 From sixteen year and nine and twenty yeed.
 Fourty and five *Wallace* of age was call'd,
 That time that he was to the *Sutheron* saild:
 Though this matter be nought to all pleasure,
 His soothfast deed is worthy to advance.
 All worthy men that reads this rural dyte,
 Blame not this Book, though I be imperfite:
 I should have thanks, since I no travel spar'd;
 For my travel no man heght me reward,
 Nor charge I had of King, nor other Lord:
 Great harm I thought this good deed should be
 I have said here near as the proce's goes, (imord.
 And feigned not for friends, nor yet for foes.
 For cost hereof was no man bound to me,
 In this sentence I had no will to see;
 But in as much as I rehearsed nought
 So worthily as noble *Wallace* wrought.
 But in one point I grant I said amisse:
 These two Knights should blamed be of this,

The Knight *Wallace* of *Craigie* righteous Lord,
 And *Liddaill* too, caused me make wrong record
 On *Allartoun* mure, the Crown he took one day
 To get battel, as mine Author wil say;
 These two coul'd me say on another wise,
 To Master *Blair* we did part of supprise,

FINIS.



*Thus endeth William Wallace might,
 Behinde him left not such a Knight,
 Of worthinesse, and deed of hand,
 From thraldome thrice he fred this Land.*



The Conclusion of this
B O O K.

GO, noble Book, fulfilled
of sentence,
Suppose thou be barren of E-
loquence.
Go, worthy Book, fulfilled of
vvorthy deed,
But thee to help of Language
thou hast need;
When good Makers rang wel
into *SCOTLAND*,
Great harm it was that none
of them thee fand.
Yet there is part that can thee
well advance,

Now

Now bide the time, and be in
remembrance.

I you beseech of your bene-
volence,

Who will not love, lack not
mine Eloquence.

It is well known I am a Rural
man,

And here have done as good-
ly as I can :

My tongue did never ornate
terms embrace,

I beseech God, that giver is of
grace,

Made he and earth, and set the
heaven above,

That he till us grant his dear
lasting love.

E P L

EPITAPHIUM

Gulielmi Wallace.

INvida mors tristi Gulielmum funere Val-
Quæ cuncta tollit sustulit. (lam,
Et tanto pro cive, cinis : pro finibus urna est:
Frigusque pro lorica obit,
Ille quidem terras, loca se inferiora, reliquit,
At fata factis suppressens,
Parte sui meliore solum, Cælumque pererrat,
Hoc, spiritu, illud gloria.
At tibi si inscriptum generoso pectus honesto
Fuisset, hostis prodiit
Artibus Angle tuis, in pœnas parcior isse:
Nec oppidatim spargeres
Membra viri sacrandæ adytis. Sed scin quid in
Immanitate viceris? (ista
Ut valla incunctas oras spargantur & horar
Laudes; tuumque dedecus.

FINIS.





